

THE WEAPON

THE GLOBALISTS FEAR

The Genesis bombshell

...and the scientific evidence

Jonathan Gray

About the author

Jonathan Gray has travelled the world to gather data on ancient mysteries. A serious student of origins and pre-history, he has investigated numerous archaeological sites, and has also penetrated some largely un-explored areas, including parts of the Amazon headwaters. Between lecturing worldwide on archaeology, religion and biblical textual issues, the author has hosted newspaper columns and contributed to various magazines.

First published 2009

Copyright © Jonathan Gray 2009

All rights reserved

Limited portions of this work may be copied for study or review purposes without written permission, provided that the source is duly credited.

OTHER BOOKS BY JONATHAN GRAY

Dead Men's Secrets
 More Dead Men's Secrets
 Sting of the Scorpion
 The Ark Conspiracy
 Curse of the Hatana Gods
 64 Secrets Ahead of Us
 Bizarre Origin of Egypt's Ancient Gods
 The Lost World of Giants
 Discoveries: Questions Answered
 Sinai's Exciting Secrets
 Ark of the Covenant
 The Killing of Paradise Planet
 Surprise Witness
 The Corpse Came Back
 The Discovery That's Toppling Evolution
 UFO Aliens: The Deadly Secret
 Stolen Identity: Jesus Christ – History or Hoax?
 Who's Playing Jesus Games?
 The Da Vinci Code Hoax
 The Sorcerers' Secret
 What Happened to the Tower of Babel?
 The 2012 Prophecy
 Welcome, Then Betrayal
 How Long Was Jesus in the Tomb?
 The Big Dating Blunder
 Modern Religious Myths About Genesis
 Will You Survive?
 Update International Volume 1
 Update International Volume 2
 Update International Volume 3
 Update International Volume 4
 Update International Volume 5
 Update International Volume 6

E-BOOKS FROM

http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_ebooks.html :

In Search of Lost Cities
 Into the Unknown
 In a Coffin in Egypt
 The Magic of the Golden Proportion
 4 Major Discoveries
 Curse of the Pharaohs

CONTENTS

	Page
<i>Introduction</i>	
GENESIS AND THE DESTROYERS.....	7
1 They “couldn’t write” back then?	
“DAD, SEND ME MONEY”.....	19
2 Genesis: “He spoke and it was”	
COULD ANYTHING BE SPOKEN	
INTO EXISTENCE?.....	26
3 Genesis: “Each after his kind”	
AREN’T THE CHANGES IN SPECIES,	
EVOLUTION?.....	45
4 Genesis: “Eve the mother of all”	
CREATED FROM DUST AND BONES?.....	53
5 Our world before the great disaster	
A PERFECT ENVIRONMENT.....	68
6 The day Planet Earth died	
THE END STRUCK SUDDENLY.....	73
7 How languages broke up	
THE FIRST NEW WORLD ORDER.....	83
8 Did Genesis “steal” foreign fables?	
A COPY-CAT FAKE?.....	93
9 Compared: Genesis and other documents	
GO FOR THE BEST!.....	106
10 Did later priests plot and pretend?	
DID THE WRITERS CONSPIRE?	113
11 2000 to 1500 BC and no later	
A FIND IN THE SYRIAN DESERT	117
12 The Table of Nations	
IS GENESIS IGNORANT OF WORLD GEOGRAPHY?...	130
13 All of us from the skipper’s three sons?	
DO YOU HAVE ROYAL BLOOD?	143

	Page
14 Sodom and Gomorrah	
LOST CITIES IN THE DESERT.....	153
15 Were the Hebrews really in Egypt?	
IN A TUNNEL BELOW THE HOT SANDS.....	171
16 A winner time after time	
THEY WANTED HIM DEAD.....	189
17 The ancient Genesis tablets	
THE TABLETS “MYSTERY”.....	195
18 It’s in the title	
WHO WROTE EACH TABLET?.....	205
19 Why it is the oldest	
THE WORLD’S OLDEST PIECE OF WRITING.....	220
20 Genesis changed since Moses’ time?	
DOCUMENT CHANGE FORBIDDEN.....	226
21 Sub-surface code	
WHY YOU COULD NEVER WRITE GENESIS	
IF YOU TRIED.....	238
22 Prophetic foreknowledge	
ASTONISHING PROPHECIES COME TRUE.....	259
23 Genesis is in our racial memory	
7 FORGOTTEN SECRETS.....	264
<i>Finale</i>	
THE WEAPON THE GLOBALISTS FEAR.....	287
<i>Appendix</i>	
NEW WORLD ORDER CODED IN GENESIS?.....	293
STARTLING QUANTUM MECHANICS DISCOVERY.....	296

Introduction

GENESIS AND THE DESTROYERS

This is about a battle between a *document* and a *death squad*.

A frightening agenda is being put into operation – to eliminate most of this world’s population. New World Order planners say this needs to be done, so they can have their Utopia world. But an unseen bombshell is set to explode – and seal the fate of these plotters.

The extermination plot

In 1974, in an address to the National Security Council, former US Secretary of State Henry Kissinger presented 2 billion people as the desired level of reduction, but in fact the depopulation policy may seek a 2-4 billion reduction, or up to two thirds of the world's population. This depopulation policy is intended by the world's ruling elite to result in control of mineral and strategic resources and water and total control of the world's wealth. (“Implications of world wide population growth for US security & overseas interests”, *National Security Memo 200*, April 24, 1974)

By 1979 depopulation was the top priority of US national security policy, as outlined in the national security paper *Global 2000* written by Rockefeller contractors Henry Kissinger, Z. Brzezinski, Gen. Alexander Haig, and Ed Muskie for President Carter.

We now see a progressive enacting of this plot in the stealthy release of biological/genetic/recombinant DNA weapons, such as AIDS, swine flu, forced vaccinations in third world countries, and now systematic use of

depleted uranium.

An intellectual bomb let loose

We might be aghast at the dangers of the nuclear bomb in the hands of terrorists or renegade governments. Yet even more deadly than all of the above is an intellectual bomb that has been let loose on the race.

Hitler's atrocities were based on it. So were those of Stalin, Mao tse Tung and Pol Pot.

Now it is the turn of the New World Order crazies.

What is this intellectual ticking bomb? Nothing less than the **nihilistic mindset** which has dominated scientific thought for the past century. Based on the popularised "E" theory (theory of evolution), nihilism is now in danger of committing mankind to a course of automatic self-destruction.

You may be surprised to learn that many leading scientists are now questioning the validity of evolution. But the damage has been done. It has had a free hand and little or no opposition in the universities and colleges, and through the press and television, all these years. It has resulted in reasoning which has brought the most disastrous consequences.

The propaganda has already moulded society's thinking. The people continue to remain, for the most part, blissfully unaware of what has happened and continue to believe the litany of Globalist lies being poured upon them by their propaganda media organs, never once raising any objection to billions of dollars being poured into perpetuating their ignorance.

And like it or not, its influence is largely responsible for our present-day social, political and moral problems.

It is true, you know. The models with which we identify strongly influence our behaviour. The man who believes he came from a beast may be more likely to behave like a beast. The image is not only degrading. It is dangerous.

Now just think about this. If atheistic evolution is true, then there are really no absolutes. No right or wrong ways of doing things. So "anything

goes” – incest, fraud, violence – whatever you want. There can be no objective criteria for patterns of living or for codes of law. Do you see?

The idea of man as simply an evolving result of mutational accidents, the highest of the animals, must inevitably lead to the devaluation of an individual’s basic rights.

We already see the result of this in many parts of the world, where the rights of the individual have come to be regarded as secondary to those of the State. They can indoctrinate your children against your beliefs, confiscate your property, vaccinate you forcibly, and so on.

Now just think about this. If the survival of the fittest results in improvement of the race, then *the use of force and cruelty* to crush the weak and unfit *is justified*.

The “E” mindset of Hitler

The appeal of totalitarian systems such as Nazism, Communism and Secular Humanism, owe a great deal to the acceptance of evolution... as do fascism, anarchism, atheism and militarism. Take away evolution theory from these belief systems, and they effectively lose a central premise necessary for their coherence.

If you didn’t know, evolution theory was a powerful influence on the mindset which dominated Nazi and Communist leaders.

They held that the “survival of the fittest” applied not only in nature but also in the struggle between races and nations. Those groups that were hostile to the State or were biologically inferior needed to be weeded out if the State was to prosper.

Hitler implemented the racist ideas of Social Darwinism. And, as you know, this culminated in the well-organized plan to slaughter Jews, Slavs and the unfit.

Hitler believed that the evolutionary process could be sped up by the extermination of so called inferior branches of evolution.

As the holocaust swept into action, Himmler regarded the victims as vermin, as though he was handling a biological disease.

“Does a rat catcher think it is wrong to catch rats?” asked a Nazi defendant at the Nuremburg war criminal trials.

So came the death camps, in which millions of men, women and children were exterminated.

Gold watches, gold wedding rings, gold teeth and gold eye glasses that the victims left behind were deposited into the federal bank. One witness admitted it took an extra five minutes to kill the women, because they had to cut their hair off to be used in making mattresses.

Of course, we cannot blame Charles Darwin and his colleagues personally for such gruesome practices. But we need to recognise that unquestioning belief in evolution was a ***CENTRAL*** feature of the Nazi belief system, and ***not just incidental*** to it.

The “E” factor inspired Communism

The central tenet of Communism was the theory of Class Struggle. Its concept of “dialectical materialism” relied heavily on evolution as a fact.

So were launched the communist purges of 60 million in the USSR alone, and tens of millions more in China. The victims were regarded as nothing more than creatures that were expendable in the quest for a classless society.

Again, evolution theory was **ESSENTIAL** to Communism, not just incidental to it. The central proposition of Class Struggle depended upon evolution theory for plausibility.

To be fair, one might not blame evolution theory for the inhuman and degrading acts carried out by Nazism and Communism. However, the impact of evolution needs to be placed in its proper context. In other words, we need to give it due recognition.

Evolution thinking inspires the Globalists

The present New World Order plotters are building their plans upon the same basic tenet.

This same elite gang have taken over the political, religious, and economic spheres. It is they who are plunging our world into its current financial crisis. They need to collapse every nation's economy, so they can replace it with their One World Government. A Conspiracy Theorist statement? No, it is a statement of fact.

Just look around you. They own the pharmaceutical industry and have hijacked the medical system with their drugs to squeeze as much money as possible from the sick before they die.

The same ruthless elite engineered the 9/11 murder of thousands of innocent office workers so as to arouse enough public indignation to support their money-making wars in Afghanistan and Iraq. (Evidence: See my book *Welcome, Then Betrayal*. <http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_ebooks.html>)

And now these charlatans are steering organized religion into their planned New World Order.

And, as a *coup de grace*, they have taken over the education system and a compliant media to persuade you that you are a mere evolutionary accident...therefore human life is expendable to serve their goals.

You see, this is a deliberate, crafty campaign. And it is BIGGER and wider ranging than you may have ever suspected.

Yes, the Globalists are plotting that they – not you – will emerge the ruling survivors.

The document they hate

They control the shadowy Bilderberg Group, a financial, political and corporate elite who, at a meeting in Greece in mid-May, 2009, agreed that in order to continue their drive towards a New World Order, the US Dollar has to be “totally” destroyed.

Investigative journalist Daniel Estulin, whose information from inside Bilderberg has routinely proven accurate, states that the global elite's plan to completely destroy the economy and ultimately lower global population by two thirds has stoked fears even within Bilderberg itself that the fallout from such chaos could ultimately result in the globalists losing their control over the world. (Intelligence reporter Sorch Faal, May 21, 2009)

Yes, these criminals, despite their money, their power and their plan, do have fears. And here is another thing they fear and hate...

As these murder mongers step up their pace, there is a document that stands in their way... a document so powerful that, if it were to be re-awakened in the psyche of the masses, would seriously hamper their plans.

It's a document they dislike intensely, and whose power they fear. So they are doing their best, as "professionally" as possible, to discredit it.

That document is ***the book of Genesis***, part of the most widely translated piece of literature in the world – the Bible.

And if you didn't know it, this document is explosive! It's a powerhouse of currently vital, hot information. When common people plug into its message for today, they become ignited, invincible and unafraid.

That's exactly what the Globalist villains don't want - an informed, empowered and fearless population. They are obsessed with you becoming subdued, slumbering, and submissive to them, so that they can more easily execute their dark plans.

The real issue

Do you think the overall issue is merely academic – such as evolution versus creation?

Forget it! That's not the issue at all. We're talking about a much, much, much BIGGER PICTURE.

The GREAT, WIDE PICTURE is this. Here are the two sides:

1. Firstly, there is **the Globalist death squad**, who are plotting to eliminate most people now living – and that probably includes you and your family. Behind them is an "invisible" government – the real plotters. As an earlier Prime Minister of Britain, the Marquis of Salisbury, acknowledged, "We are in the presence of forces far larger than we can wield."

This One World Government agenda has been preparing for several hundred years. Only now does it appear within reach. The

anti-Genesis attack has been a key part of this strategy for almost as long... because the plotters fear its power over the minds of the people. They know that once it captivates the minds of the masses it has power to undermine the Globalists' plans to rule and suppress.

2. Secondly, there is **the Genesis document**, which is the voice of a totally opposite Power. It says, NO! You cannot silence, oppress, or eliminate your fellow human beings. This beautiful earth came from the mind of a loving Creator, which makes every person's life sacred, to be respected. You were created a dignified, free being, answerable firstly to your Maker, then to your family. The State is to serve you, not to oppress you.

This document also outlines principles by which you can survive both the impending financial crash, the coming tyranny and beyond. Did you know that?

Yes, that so-called 'mythical' book of Genesis turns out to be an absolutely amazing source of information. So very practical!

You don't have to guess how unacceptable is this Genesis ideal to the New World Order gangsters. Is it any wonder they want it out of the way?

So to systematically dull down the minds of the masses, they have been shrewdly preparing and using a compliant servant team of "nice guy" educators whose doctorates, salaries and grants depend on toeing the line – who will parrot the ideology that "we're *here by accident* - humans are not children of the Creator, but '*useless eaters*' that are *expendable* to evolutionary progress."

That's the bottom line.

The innocent pawns

You realise, of course, that teachers, lecturers and textbook writers are just the front men who stand up visibly. Most of them are probably honest men and women who are unsuspecting that they are being used. And many of them would be aghast at the "expendable" idea. They haven't joined the dots. So they remain unwitting puppets.

Just like so many people in the media. It has been observed that “most journalists are so brain-dead themselves, so lacking in understanding of what they are part of, that they, like most of the population, play a part in advancing an agenda they do not even know exists.” (*Uncensored* magazine, September-December 2009)

It has fallen my lot, as an archaeologist, to become conversant with the strategy of the real, unseen powers who pull the strings. Yes, the lovely tentacles of this plot are reaching right into my field of operation.

You ask, what on earth do New World Order plans have to do with archaeology? Plenty. Because archaeology, whether you know it or not, encroaches on some matters that these nice Globalists are hell-bent on suppressing. Archaeology frequently touches on the book of Genesis – the very document which makes the Globalists see red.

That’s why they have launched a campaign against Genesis and related biblical documents. And in this ideological war, educators, including “higher critics” and even skeptics are often unwitting pawns, to be used, then cast aside.

The idea is to insidiously cast doubt on the documents and thereby, hopefully, neutralise their power. It is a massive mind-control strategy.

Let me give you a classic example of how this works.

Desperate denials

You’ve heard the story of Moses who led the escape of the Hebrew slaves from Egypt, and the drowning of Pharaoh’s army in the Red Sea? That particular topic is frequently used as a weapon – and the poor educator, confidently playing their game for them, ends up getting his fingers burnt.

One such occasion was in 1978. While divers were searching for possible remains of this event, a professor trained in the art of “higher criticism” by his mentors (whose training he had trusted) was stating on camera with all the weight of letters after his name, that the biblical Exodus “never happened.”

Poor man! **He missed the greatest underwater discovery of the century.**

Now such a mistake would discredit any “higher critic”, but the critic was quick to compound it. In 1991, he said, with an awesome display of knowledge, that “the biblical King David never existed.” Two years later a team of archaeologists led by Professor Avraham Biram at Tel Dan unearthed an inscription referring to *Beit David*, the dynasty of King David of Israel.

Result: The critic dared not breathe a word.

This goes on and on. In 2001, a highly placed academic, with his mentors in the background pulling the strings, assured us that “The Bible’s King Solomon is all invention.” On January 12, 2003, geologists announced that they had examined a stone tablet dating to 800 BC which detailed repair plans for the Jewish temple of King Solomon.

Poor guy, he just faded away and has not been heard of since.

Then a learned scholar (again trained for this very role) went out of his way to poo-hoo the Genesis story that burning sulphur balls rained down from the heavens upon Sodom and Gomorrah. Triumphant he and a colleague spluttered in laughter, “Haw, haw, haw... There never were such cities, nor such an event.” But nobody laughed when remains of the ashen cities were found peppered with sulphur balls in the southern Israel desert.

The poor critics saw their mirth disappear down the drain.

The fall guys

With this incredible record for being wrong, it might be asked, WHY DOES ANYONE PAY ANY ATTENTION TO THESE MIGHTY THINKERS?

In fairness, it must be stated that these scholars are the fall guys. They sincerely believe in what they are doing. That’s all they’ve been taught. Most of them are so lacking in understanding of what they are part of, that they, like most of the population, play a part in advancing an agenda they do not even know exists.

Prodded on by those unseen ones who pay their salary, they call on flimsy archaeological data to convince themselves that their anti-Genesis

onslaught will succeed. Their mentors hover in the background, out of harm's way.

This scam goes on every day... in the controlled universities, the media and in religious seminaries.

One ploy of these dear men is to put a forced, mystical construction upon many portions of Genesis. Because its plain teaching conflicts with their world view, they try to destroy its force. They don't like the plain word of the text, because then they would be obliged to change their behaviour.

But the fact that that 'crazy' book Genesis and its companion documents are being exonerated time and again by physical archaeological finds, should tell us something... don't you think?

Take note. Genesis says we are here by design. That you and your precious children are worth more than silver or gold. That every person on this planet is of inestimable value.

And this runs in direct opposition to the propaganda of the New World Order gurus.

The question we need to keep asking

Now here is a question to ponder seriously: Was the evolution theory adopted because it was scientifically justified, or was it deliberately taken on board – despite evidence against it - as the excuse for an agenda?

As we go into the *Globalist versus Genesis* investigation, just keep thinking about that.

Genesis of urgent, practical value NOW

Now please get this. As we slide into the greatest crisis in history, Genesis contains an urgent message for us NOW. Embedded within this record is *a core of absolutely stunning information* that is of life-saving, practical value for every one of us.

It is information that can help you survive in the increasingly dangerous environment being forced upon us by the New World Order psychopaths. It is information from which you can benefit. (The ***Genesis Survival Guide*** is in Book 2 of this trilogy, *Will You Survive?*)

Meanwhile, in this present work, you are about to see stunning evidence that ***Genesis – believe it or not - is a document you can trust with your life.***

Firstly, we shall listen to the critics as they present their major objections.

Secondly, we shall uncover compelling ***scientific evidence*** of Genesis' absolute, physical, factual truth.

Thirdly and finally, we shall fire the Genesis torpedo – which hits the sinister New World Order plot right between the eyes.

To the skeptic

A quick word to the skeptic. I can empathise with you because I have been one myself. Not forgetting that there were times when I had to admit to being mistaken. But that is nothing to be ashamed of.

Now, since we are about to investigate a heavily-attacked document, it is well to bear in mind that good scholarship will follow Aristotle's Dictum:

The benefit of the doubt is to be given to the document itself, not arrogated by the critic to himself.

That is, one must listen to the claims of the document under analysis, and not assume fraud or error unless the author disqualifies himself by contradictions or known factual inaccuracies. In other words, it is to be accepted that a document is genuine, unless there is compelling reason to believe otherwise. Would you say that is fair?

What, then, are we about to consider?

1. Firstly, we have **an accused** (the Genesis document) and
2. Secondly, **an accuser** (the New World Order critics of Genesis).

You will understand that this requires a no nonsense, "look in the mirror with new honesty" approach. May one state that ***when the critic who is***

honestly mistaken hears the truth, he will either quit being mistaken or cease to be honest.

So, are you ready? Again, this is dynamite. It is life-changing stuff. I think you will enjoy it.

1 They “couldn’t write” back then?

“DAD, SEND ME MONEY”

When they talk about a sucker you can picture a placid and healthy sow, quietly lying on the grass besieged by a swarm of piglets whose only aim is to get as much as possible in the least possible time.

You can also picture the other type of sucker, the human type, who is so gullible that he swallows up any piffle that he happens to hear.

Here is the origin of the “confidence man” who carefully selects a fool, tells him some cock-and-bull yarn and then proceeds to relieve him of some of his hard-earned cash.

When you hear about it, you would hardly credit that a business man in a responsible position would purchase shares in an unknown goldmine, or that a professor would sink money into an expedition to locate a mysterious treasure.

But you don’t even have to leave your home town to learn that there are wealthy and wise fools born every minute.

As well as those taken in by the big tricks, there are the countless numbers who are bluffed by the small tricks. Have you ever read in the paper such ads. as these:

* *“Are You a Slave to Drink? Cure Yourself the Easy Way. Save Dollars. Write To Us Without Delay.”*

* *“Do Your Friends Like You? Learn How to Become the Center of Attraction. Boost Up Your Personality Be Wanted. Be Popular. Don’t Be the Mouse Who Slinks into the Corner. Get Wise to Yourself. The Power is Within You. Bring It Out!”*

The demand is there, all the time. The world is full of ordinary people who are conscious of their own failings, weaknesses and needs. But the tragedy is that so many look for the Advice-By-Return-Mail method of finding a solution.

Don't be bluffed. The 55 cent stamp won't bring back any cut and dried answer. It generally leads to a "course costing only \$199" or something like that. And after that, what?

There are some people who are in the business of deceiving. They have it down to perfection. Some of them go as far as to write books. Under the pretence of giving you knowledge about the mysteries of the past, they spin subtle innuendos and lying propaganda. And otherwise brilliant suckers are conned.

In my work as a field archaeologist, historian and investigator, I come across such con men frequently. My work touches not only on archaeology, but it even brings me into the field of religion. And here, perhaps, more than anywhere, I see honest people being conned.

And why do tricksters swarm this field? Because they know that it contains so many honest, trusting people who are not expecting con men to penetrate that sphere.

The con mans' tale

Now let's go back into history. In the mid 1800s it was generally accepted that the biblical book of Genesis was a true record of man's earliest history. At that time, there was little solid evidence to support such a view. Acceptance was based largely on faith.

Then modern thought began moving into theories that contradicted some of the Genesis story. "The age of enlightenment" had arrived.

And the rumour started going around that Genesis was only a "myth".

One objection came up that Genesis, the "book of beginnings", was not written (as believed) so early as the time of Moses – because in 1400 BC "*writing was still unknown*". Therefore its stories must have been passed down orally. So they might be no more than myths, legends or fables.

It turned out that this intellectual “discovery” was coming from a most unexpected quarter – scholars in Germany who were graduating from seminaries which trained Protestant ministers.

How could this be? Was not Germany the beating heart of the Protestant Reformation, which championed the Bible?

To understand this strange development, we need to go back a little further.

For a thousand years, the ruling Church had fiercely suppressed the Bible. Why? Because it exposed the corruption of the ruling Church. This hatred had resulted in countless hand-written copies being seized upon and burned. It was a forbidden book.

Then came the invention of the printing press. In 1516 the New Testament in Greek was printed. Mass production was now possible. No longer could the book be successfully suppressed.

“We must destroy the printing press, or it will destroy us,” shouted the Vicar of Croydon.” (E.R. Palmer, *The Printing Press and the Gospel*, p.24)

In France, printers who were convicted of printing Bibles were seized and burned alive. And on February 26, 1535, a law was passed to suppress printing! (Samuel Smiles, *The Huguenots*, pp.20,21, and first footnote)

But the Reformation (led by a brave German priest of the Church, Martin Luther) was continuing to wrench Europe out of the Church’s clutches. It seemed invincible.

The Church leaders were aghast. They realised that they must act decisively. New tactics were required.

Since the driving force of the Protestant movement was seen to be the Bible, this must be broken. The Bible had to be discredited. How could this be done? Only by spreading confusion as to its origin and authenticity!

Globalist plan

To counteract the Protestant movement, the Jesuit organization was founded by Ignatius Loyola. Its other aim was to bring all nations under the Church's power – a Globalist strategy, the agenda of a New World Order.

The anti-Genesis attack

And so it was that Germany, the birthplace of the Reformation, was to become the initial focus of attack. (This is described in more detail in my book, *The Sorcerers' Secret*. <http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_ebooks.html>)

How better to accomplish their aim than to infiltrate Protestant seminaries? So “wise” instructors were planted undercover in the centres of learning to “prove” that the Bible was composed of myths and contained numerous errors.

The effect of this “higher criticism”, as it was called, was to break the driving force of Protestantism. And, starting with Germany, the infiltration strategy would be ultimately pursued right throughout the scholarly world. Today it is called “modernism”.

Darwin's evolution theory was adopted as part of their weaponry. These men infiltrated and took over the universities, and today no scientist who dares question it, is allowed funding.

It is significant that this anti-Bible onslaught did not originate with atheists, but with a large religious organization. - an organization that was to become a driving force in the New World Order movement. Join the dots and you'll see the connection.

But back to the weaponry used by these men.

As we have already noted, it came to be taught that Genesis, “the book of beginnings”, was not written as early as the time of Moses – because in 1400 BC “*writing was still unknown*”. Therefore its stories must have been passed down orally – as mere myths, legends or fables.

For many years, nobody could deny the insistent arguments of these “learned” men, made wonderfully possible by the lack of knowledge concerning the ancient world.

Early man's alleged "ignorance"

And so the smart sell continued that early man was ignorant and writing was unknown.

But you can't keep the public locked in the dark forever. And it fell to archaeologists to unexpectedly open the door. Armed with picks and spades they had begun trotting out to the Middle East. And news came filtering back concerning some startling discoveries.

1. **SINAI PENINSULA:** At the traditional Mount Sinai, Semitic *alphabetic inscriptions* were discovered. And these were found to date from the early 2nd millennium BC.

2. **PALESTINE:** In one place after another, throughout southern and central Palestine, *writings* came to be unearthed that went back to the 16th century BC and even earlier. (Henry M. Morris, *Science and the Bible*. Amersham, Bucks, England: Scripture Press, 1988, pp.94-95)

These discoveries were bombshells. They revealed not only that writing was known, but that the art of writing was widespread.

Texts written in an early form of semi-pictorial *alphabetic script* came to light at Lachish, Tel el-Hesi, Beth-shemesh, Shechem, Megiddo, Gezer and Tell el-'Ajjul.

3. **SYRIA:** Then, in the 1970s, the ancient city of Ebla in northern Syria was excavated. It contained a massive **17,000 documents**, all written prior to 2000 BC.

In 1975, when Dr Matthiae and his team were excavating in the royal palace, they discovered a student's exercise tablet. The student had been practising writing the alphabet. Why was this such an amazing find? Because it was believed that the Hebrew alphabet did not originate until well over 1,000 years later. Now here was found an ancient precursor of the Hebrew alphabet, from *centuries before the time of Moses*.

4. **IRAQ:** Other great *libraries* just as old were unearthed also at Ur and Nuzi in Iraq.

Letters in envelopes

Fifty-five clay tablets, some of them enclosed in baked clay envelopes, came to light from the time of Hammurabi, who was king of Babylonia, sometime in the period of 2000 to 1500 BC.

A schoolhouse of the time of Hammurabi was uncovered, with the clay tablets, exercises and books of the boys and girls still lying on the floor.

One tablet slate bears the proverb, “He who shall excel in tablet-writing shall shine like the stars.”

So Genesis could not have been written so early, eh? The Hebrews knew no alphabetic writing? These finds stunned the higher critics. No informed scholar uses this argument any more.

“Dad, send me money”

The truth is that writing was not only known, but was *fairly common* among the people.

And fortunately, letters from these ancient times have survived in great abundance. Among my favourites are these:

- The letter of a Babylonian woman to her husband in his travels, in which, after telling him that the little ones are well, she asks advice on some trivial matter.
- The letter of a son to his father, in which he informs him that so-and-so has mortally offended him, that he would beat up the offender, but would like to ask his father’s advice first.
- The letter in which a son urges his father to send at last the long-promised money, offering the insolent inducement that he will then pray for his father again.

And what else does this mean? Just this, that there existed a well-organized postal system.

The book of Judges indicates that writing was a common practice among the Hebrews. It relates an incident in which a boy from Succoth “*wrote down for him [Gideon] the officials and elders of Succoth, seventy-seven men.*” (Judges 8:14)

Yes, we now possess thousands of tablets from the ancient Middle East. And hundreds of them were written before Abraham's day (2000 BC) – which itself was some 500 years before the birth of Moses.

In fact, as far back as archaeology has been able to go, in the very, very earliest times, examples of writing have been found. We have evidence that during the period covered by the greater part of Genesis, writing was in common use even for every day commercial transactions.

Poor critics! They were caught pants down. Archaeology confirmed that the book of Genesis could have been written as early as 1500 BC, after all.

Yet those "Genesis myth" books churned out in the 19th century are still in print. And some half-informed people still keep tattling that tired old tale that Moses couldn't write. How sad for them!

2 Genesis: “He spoke and it was”

COULD ANYTHING BE SPOKEN INTO EXISTENCE?

OBJECTION: There is no scientific proof validating the book of Genesis.

One spring day in 1965, a young American scientist was peering through his microscope at some thin, translucent sections of granite type rocks.

Suddenly it struck him. Here was something that – dare he even think it? – had the potential to turn an established theory upside down!

And, as it turned out, that was precisely what happened. His discoveries raised an uproar in the scientific world! And he lost funding.

Is this new to you?:

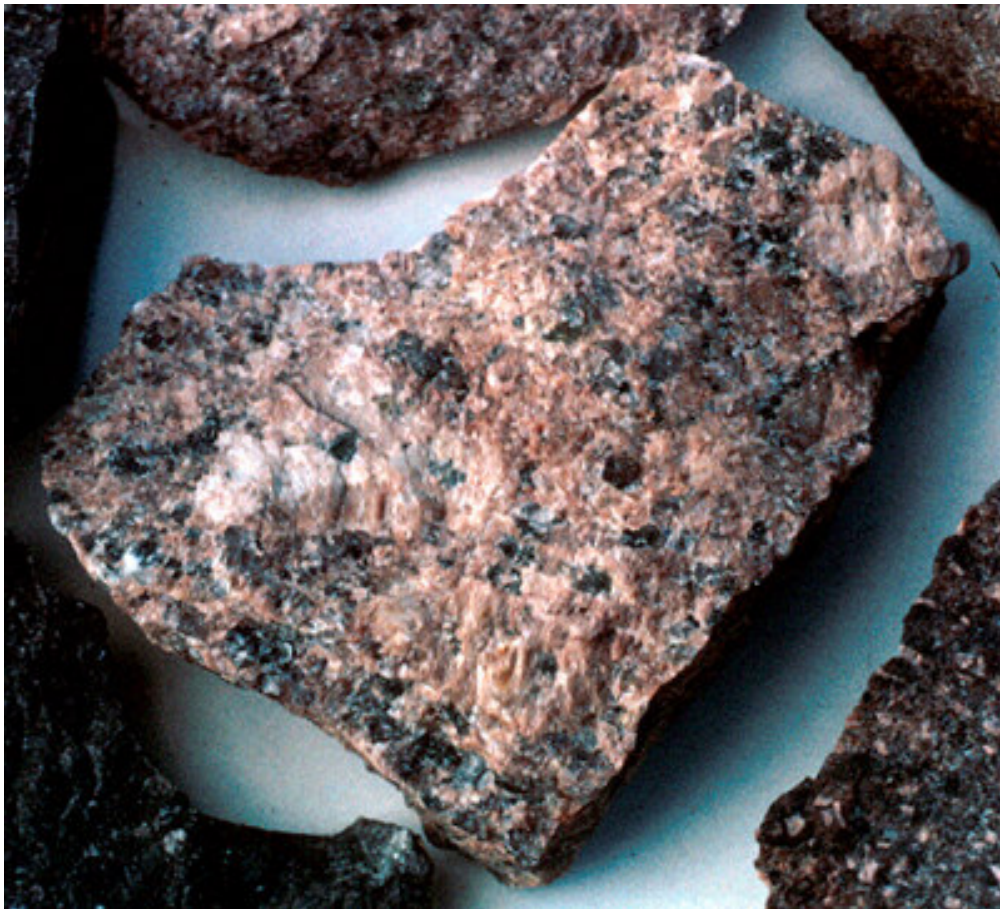
- * Did you know that **PHYSICAL scientific evidence** definitely supports the Genesis account of Creation?
- * Were you aware that reports outlining this evidence passed peer review, and were **published in the open scientific literature**?
- * Have you heard that, decades later, **this evidence still stands unrefuted** by the scientific community?

Now comes the big question:

Genesis: scientific validation

QUESTION: Is there any scientific “proof” validating the book of Genesis?
(The definition of "scientific" means that the evidence can be reproduced under laboratory conditions.)

ANSWER: Yes, here is **evidence that can be tested** under laboratory conditions. It is the kind of evidence which will qualify as “scientific” in the sense that it can be repeated. It invites close scrutiny.



A Precambrian granite

An amazing secret in granite rocks

The evidence is *embedded in the granite rocks* of our planet.

What are granite rocks? They are coarsely crystalline rocks composed primarily of the light-coloured minerals quartz and feldspar, and smaller amounts of biotite and hornblende. We should be careful when referring to granites because geologists often use this term to cover a variety of rocks, some of which are not at all similar to the “Precambrian” granite of which we are speaking.

These granite rocks are the original Genesis rocks, because:

- * they are the **foundation rocks** of the continents
- * they contain **no fossils** (as do sedimentary rocks)
- * they contain **polonium halos**.

And that’s where the story gets interesting.

How long did it take to form the solid rock?

Suppose you drop an Alka-Seltzer into a glass of water, what happens? Lots of tiny bubbles are released. How long does each bubble last? Just an instant, right?

Did you know that in the granite rocks of the earth “**bubbles**” of **polonium** have been found? A speck of polonium in molten rock is like an Alka-Seltzer dropped into a glass of water. It has a very short life. The beginning of effervescence may be equated to the instant the polonium atoms began to decay and emit radioactive particles.

If the rock remained molten very long (as evolutionary geology theory says) the traces of those radioactive particles of polonium would disappear as quickly as the Alka-Seltzer bubbles in water.

But suppose that after you dropped your Alka-Seltzer into the water, then the water was **instantly frozen**. What would happen to the bubbles? The bubbles would be **preserved**.

Likewise, polonium halos could be formed only if the "effervescing" specks of polonium had been instantly trapped in solid rock. That is, we

could find polonium halos in rock, ONLY IF *the molten rock had become suddenly solid.*

Now, as we are told by the evolutionary theory, the earth's foundation granite rocks formed as hot magma *slowly cooled from liquid to solid over millions of years.*

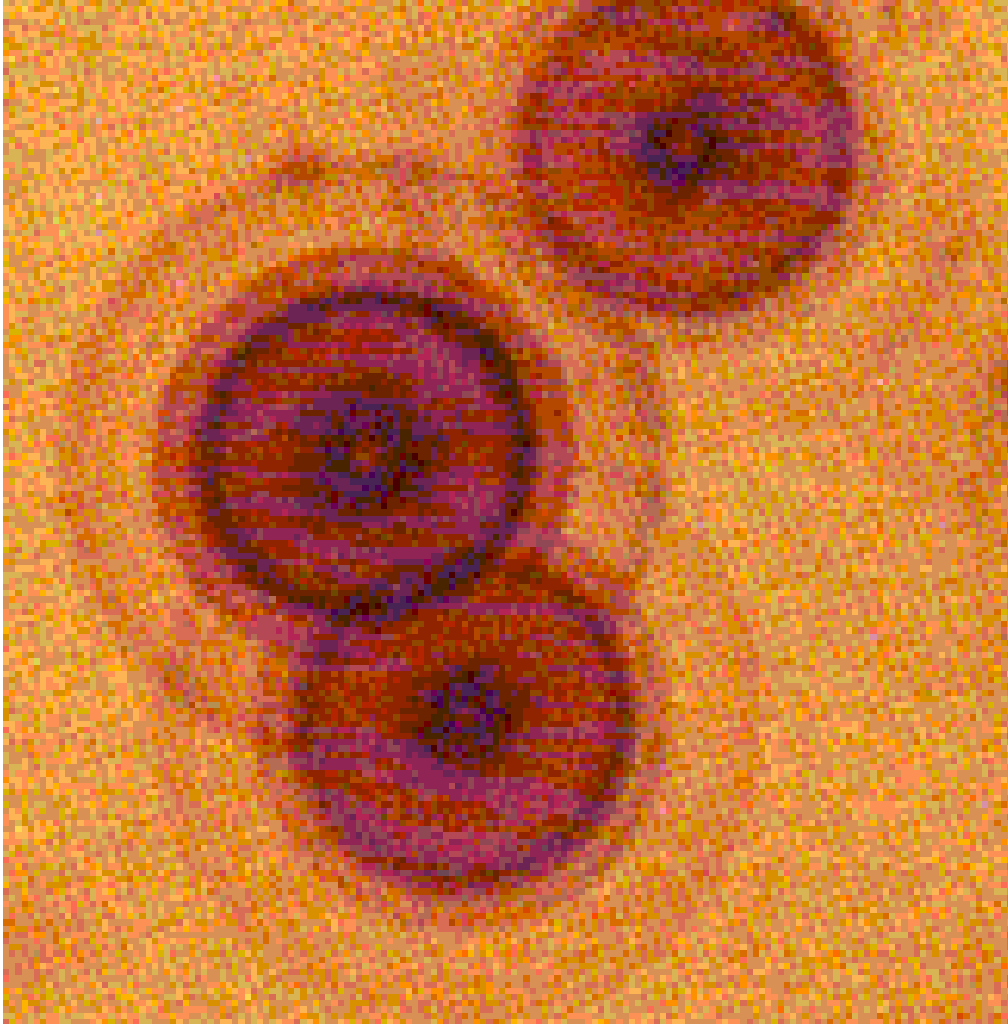
A rude shock

I was taught this at school. Very likely, you were, too. But now there comes an unsettling discovery. And you can blame it on world renowned nuclear physicist, Dr Robert Gentry. He has found something that has shaken the scientific world.

Dr Gentry was teaching and working toward a doctorate in physics at the Georgia Institute of Technology in Atlanta. He was using a microscope on some thin, translucent sections of granite-type rocks.



That spring day in 1965, as he looked closely, he noticed that there were beautiful microspheres of colouration etched within the rocks - halos. These tiny halos were series of concentric rings around a radioactive centre.



A halo is created when a grain of radioactive material in the centre decays. As it decays, it throws off alpha particles.

A polonium halo could be produced from two sources:

- (a) from the radioactive decay of uranium as a parent element, or
- (b) from the decay of original polonium (that is, with no uranium involved)

What Robert Gentry was looking at in these rocks were special types of halos. They had been produced by the radioactive decay of original polonium, which is known to have only a fleeting existence.

More exhaustive experimentation failed to reveal a secondary origin of these halos. This confirmed that the polonium that produced these halos was an original, natural element. It was present since the beginning.

This Polonium-218 is so short lived, **its half-life is a mere 3 minutes.**

This means that at the beginning of the world it had to appear in the granite while the **granite was in a liquid state**. Then it had to be “frozen” into **solidified granite within a matter of minutes** in order to produce a halo – before it totally disappeared.

And now it turns out that an exceedingly large number of polonium *halos are embedded in granite rock all around the world.*

Just as frozen Alka-Seltzer bubbles would be clear evidence of the quick-freezing of the water, so are these many polonium halos undeniable evidence that *a sea of original matter quickly "froze" into solid granite.*

Please understand that this is a **physical fact** that can be tested.

Evidence of instant creation?

As a result of Dr Gentry's experiments the question now arose, could it be that the basement rocks of the earth were actually created within the few minutes it takes for polonium to decay? Could the polonium halos actually be evidence of an instantaneous creation?

You see, if the earth's crust was created suddenly, then the rock would immediately be solid enough to hold the tracks produced by decaying polonium.

Dr Gentry submitted to the scientific establishment that these halos, then, provided unambiguous evidence of both an *almost instantaneous creation* of granites, and the young age of the earth.

To put this another way, the existence of these polonium halos distinctly implied that our earth was **formed in a very short time**, and which we discover Genesis has been telling us all along :

- * “*And God said, Let there be... and there was.*” (Gen.1:3)
- * “*And God said, Let there be... and it was so.*” (vv.6-8)
- * “*And God said, Let the..... and it was so.*” (v.9)
- * “*And God said, Let the..... and it was so.*” (v.11)
- * “*And God said, Let there be... and it was so.*” (vv.14,15)
- * “*And God said, Let the..... and it was so.*” (v.24)

These halos from original polonium invalidated the assumption of uniform decay over endless time. This pulled the rug from under the radiometrically derived 4.5 billion-year age of the earth.

It could now be asked: Were these the rocks that the Mighty One created when He spoke this planet into existence? Were these “instant” halos ***the Creator’s fingerprints*** in earth’s original rocks?

Challenge to the National Academy of Sciences

Over 20 years, Dr Gentry tried to wake up the scientific diehards concerning the implications of this discovery. He published unrefuted scientific evidence for an instant creation in premier scientific journals, including *Nature*, *Science*, *Applied Physics Letters*, and others. The evolutionist controlled National Academy of Sciences vehemently opposed the horrifying idea of creation, even claiming that the evidence for creation had been scientifically invalidated.

Dr Gentry repeatedly challenged the Academy to “publicly explain where the polonium-halo evidence for creation has ever been scientifically invalidated.”

It was embarrassing. They were unable to prove their claim. On his website <http://www.halos.com> Dr Gentry has since posted letters and other documents pertaining to his challenge to the National Academy of Science.

Every question regarding the validity or implications of the polonium-halo evidence for creation was systematically dealt with in his published

reports. The result was that every proposal for an evolutionary origin of polonium radio-halos has been systematically and experimentally falsified. And since then, no hypothetical, naturalistic scenario has yet been suggested that can account for the mystery of the polonium halo.

Of course, you can find claims to the contrary on the Internet and elsewhere. But if these claims had any real substance, they would have passed peer review and been published in the open scientific literature. The fact that they have not been, or have themselves been experimentally falsified, demonstrates the fact that this unique evidence for Creation still stands unrefuted.

The trillions of tiny polonium halos embedded in basement rocks all over this planet, together form **a Gibraltar of evidence that Creation does, after all, have a scientific basis.** At the same time it calls into question the entire radiometric dating system.

Original polonium, or from a later slow decay of uranium?

Radioactive atoms can spontaneously change, or decay, to atoms of a different type. Uranium can change into lead, or for that matter, into polonium, over a period of time. So the following question has been raised:

QUESTION: How do you know that these polonium halos in granite rock are primordial (original) polonium – and were not produced from the later slow decay of uranium?

ANSWER: Why does this question arise? Because if the polonium halos in the granites were primordial (existing from the beginning), it logically follows that the granites must also be primordial - they must be earth's original Genesis rocks. And they solidified almost instantly – fast enough to preserve the short-lived polonium bubbles. But evolution theory cannot allow that possibility.

Well, can we know for sure? Indeed, we can.

It is true that **secondary polonium halos**, derived from the decay of uranium, have been discovered (for example, in coalified wood). However, these are found to be **intrinsically different** from the polonium

halos in granite. (For a thorough presentation of such evidence, see Robert Gentry's book, *Creation's Tiny Mystery*.)

There is now much published evidence showing that polonium halos in granite have **originated independently** of uranium. More exhaustive experimentation has failed to reveal any secondary origin of the halos in granite. This means that these halos have to be **original, Genesis halos in original, primary Genesis granite rocks.**

In brief, the laboratory of nature has provided:

1. positive, unambiguous **evidence for a primordial origin** of polonium halos in granites, as well as
2. decisive, independent evidence against their secondary origin.

The challenge

If evolutionary theory were correct, it should be possible to reproduce both granite and polonium halos in granite, since this process is supposed to have happened countless times over millions of years.

But, on the other hand, **if the granites and the enclosed polonium halos are the Creator's handwriting**, then it is impossible for man to reproduce them.

And what is the reality? It is a fact that no one has produced granite, much less granite with polonium halos.

Their collective failure to do this – coupled with the fact that granite melted in the earth cools to form rhyolite, not granite – signifies that the Creator left unambiguous evidence of His creative power when He called the earth into existence suddenly.

Until the discovery of polonium halos, anyone ignorant of the Creator's astonishing power might be excused for thinking instantaneous creation to be a myth. **But not now.**

The Supreme Creator's power does not need millions of years

An ancient record states that *“By the word of the Lord were the heavens made: and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth...For **he spake, and it was done**; he commanded, and it stood fast.”* (Psa.33:6,9)

This was an instantaneous event. Just as a nuclear explosion instantly turns **matter into energy**, so at Creation God spoke, turning **energy into matter**. As you probably know, matter is energy vibrating at a different speed. Physical matter that we see today is the result of **sound** resonating energy into form.

No matter what half-informed people may say, the book of Genesis has turned out to be very scientific.

It tells us: *“And God said, Let there be... and there was.”*

The time issue is very important. Only an infinitely powerful, supremely intelligent God can create in a very short time. **The more power and intelligence operating in creation, the less time** was necessary.

He did not need to sit back for billions of years and let death and accident, suffering, brutality and randomness do His creative work.

He did not need to produce mankind from part-animals, brutally clubbing each other in a bleeding, dying world that took aeons to emerge painfully from some primordial slime.

Created by words

Genesis informs us that God created by His words. He *“spoke and it was done.”* We now know from scientific discovery that every living thing is created and recreated by a language called the DNA code.

The Creator has recorded His message upon a tape in your body cells. This DNA tape consists of two ribbons of instructions which twist around each other in helical fashion like a spiral staircase. (See pages 48 to 50.)

When God said, *“Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed,*

and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind,” God put his instructions in the form of DNA codes into all plant cells.

If you speak into a microphone, your thoughts and instructions can be recorded on a cassette tape. You can play it back time and again.

This sparks meaning into the phrase “*God said*”. What God said is recorded on nucleic acid tapes, becoming the DNA code of the cell of each plant, animal and human. Yes, it contains the instructions to create every part of every organ of your very own body. As King David recognised 3,000 years ago: “*In your book all my parts were written, every one of them.*”

God’s book is now called “Book of Man” (human genome).

There are instructions in your cells on how to manufacture and reproduce every different part of your body. The words are set out in sentences, and paragraphs and chapters.

The genes are like sentences. Several genes together make a paragraph. Many paragraphs of gene clusters make a chapter. Many chapters make a book, which we call a chromosome. There are 23 chromosome books to make the whole encyclopedia of instructions. An encyclopedia comprises a complete person. This is duplicated to make an identical copy, so that your body has two encyclopedias – that is, 46 books (chromosomes) in each human cell.

These books contain so many words that the human encyclopedia is more than ten times as long as *Encyclopedia Britannica*. To put this another way, ***over a million pages*** are needed for all human instructions.

And this DNA message is played back every time a new life is created, because its instructions are obeyed to the last letter.

This one million page DNA message book gives complicated technical instructions to make a plant or an animal or a man. They are more technical than any man-made computerised code for making a passenger airliner, for example. They are more technical than any of the computers on our planet.

Think about this. Could a series of faults in instructions (mutations) make, by accident, such a technical code?

This code, like a Morse code of dots and dashes, needs to be translated before it can be used. The truth is, this DNA code needed someone who knew the translation and then made a machine to translate it. That translation machine is included into every cell of your body, as well.

Think about this. Someone was needed to (a) know the code secret and (b) make the code breaker.

Very complicated machinery is needed by your body, like the non-stop blood-pump (your heart) and the circulatory system of pipes to and from every organ.

To produce these requires technically complex and compatible interlocking machinery to read off instructions and to manufacture correctly.

Think about this. Who provided the blueprint for correct positioning?

Also, there are over 15,000 different machines in the simplest cell of your body – as well as thousands of machine tools and thousands of workers (enzymes) at the assembly lines.

Each worker has his own special key to start up his machine. No one else has a copy of that particular key. They work at furious speed, handling thousands of molecules a minute and following instructions.

Proteins are also workers inside the cell. Each little protein molecule does the most fabulous things. It carries out complicated tasks which require great intelligence. The problem is there is not a nerve cell anywhere in its body. No brains.

Armies of proteins carry out complicated series of actions. Every step is complex, yet the finished result is always perfect.

All need to exist together, instantly!

These workers are all made, separately inside each cell, but here is the catch: the cell cannot make them until they are made, because they are part of the cell. In other words, they cannot be made without the cell doing it. But the cell cannot exist unless they are already there to form the cell.

DNA only works because it has enzymes to help it; enzymes only work because there are protein chains; protein only works because of DNA; DNA only works because it is formed of protein chains. They all have to be there together, immediately, at the same time.

But the enzymes only work because the protein chains are coded in a special sequence by DNA. DNA can only replicate with the help of protein enzymes. We are really in a chicken and egg situation.” (E. Ambrose, *The Nature and Origin of the Biological World*, p. 135)

Here’s a puzzle for you. DNA cannot form without pre-existing protein. But proteins cannot form without pre-existing DNA!

So, please answer me: From where and how did the first protein originate, to facilitate the DNA code structure in each species?

Mathematical probability alone has shown that even if our earth and our universe were billions times trillions of years old, it would not even begin to scratch the odds of the simplest protein molecule forming by chance, much less an entire cell.

This requires intelligent, outside input.

Yes, genetics is God’s speech in creation.

Outmoded theory

You and I need to stop believing the errors of those armchair experts who peddle evolution. They are stuck with an outmoded mid-19th century theory that was devised when almost nothing was known about proteins, genetics, or microbiology. And they are ashamed to admit that modern research has shown their theory to be a hoax. Although they choose to defend an error, you do not have to be part of it.

Voice pictures

Let’s consider this from another angle.

We noted the statement that “*By the word of the Lord were the heavens*

*made: and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth...For **he spake, and it was done**; he commanded, and it stood fast.”* (Psalm 33:6,9)
 Here’s another: “...*the worlds were **framed** by the **word** of God.*”
 (Hebrews 11:3)

Does this mean that He could stand back and say, “Come on light... you exist”, and it would exist – just like that?

That’s exactly it. We can’t do it, but, according to the Scripture, the supreme Creator can. Often through the Genesis creation account (as recorded in Genesis 1), we find, “*God said... and it was so.*” As He named a thing, it immediately existed. As He called it, it appeared. As He spoke, it came into existence.

I have in my possession some amazing pictures. They were photographed by a Mrs Watts-Hughes, a voice teacher.

This lady decided one day to experiment. She would try to record in some way the intensity of her voice as she sang. So she placed an elastic membrane over the large opening of some sort of receiver. Then she ran a large tube to her mouth.

On the elastic membrane she placed some sand, or powder, slightly moistened. As she sang, the vibrations of her voice were transmitted to the membrane.

In each instance, the agitation of the sand produced the shape of some flower, or plant, or tree, or some form of simple animal life. (*The Century Magazine*, in the US Library of Congress)

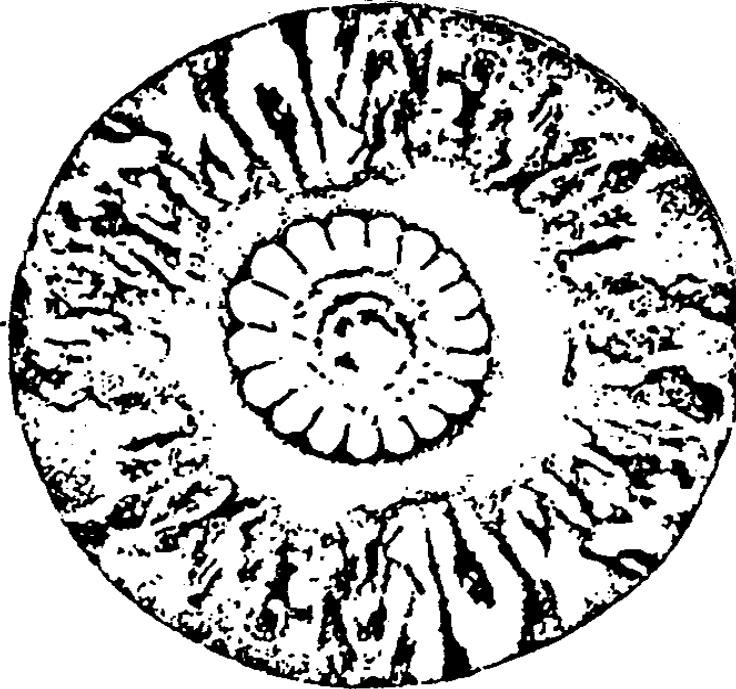
Among the forms she photographed was a daisy. She sang into the tube, and around a raised centre, petals sprang out. There were from six to thirty, or even more, of these petals on a bloom. Sometimes they would appear singly, and at other times there would be two, three, or even four layers of petals, partially overlapping each other, showing the same difference we see between the double and treble garden flowers and wild flowers we see in nature.

Just think about this. If a human being can sing into a tube, causing sand, or powder, to agitate and form shapes of plants, trees, and so on, then what about our Maker? If a man’s breath can produce the forms, or shapes, of plant life, don’t you think that the Supreme Creator could, by the breath of His mouth, do exactly what Genesis says He did?

When the Creator spoke, whatever He named immediately existed – not merely in shape, but in living form.

Again, the Scripture says, “*Through faith we understand that the worlds were **framed by the word** of God.*” (Heb.11:3)

It doesn’t really sound so absurd any more, does it?



Daisy form

Speaking further of her experiments, Mrs Watts-Hughes wrote:

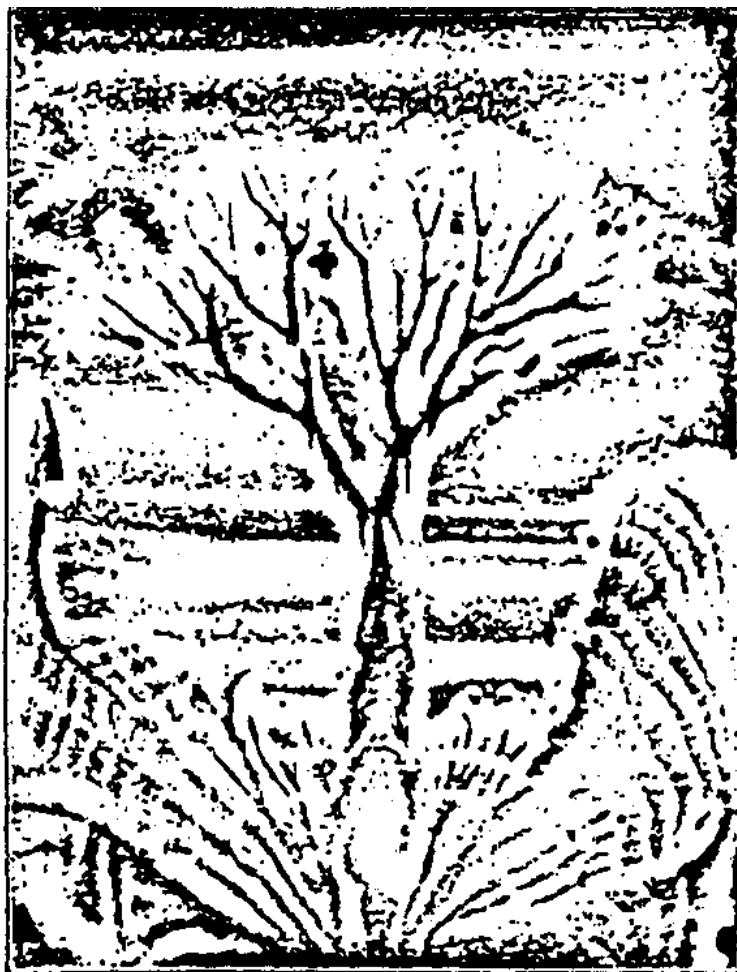
I regret particularly that I have not found it possible to preserve perfectly the most delicate of these floral forms, as they in part collapse when the moist paste dries.

Further, I may mention that I have also obtained another description of voice-flowers, distinct from the above mentioned daisy class both in form and in the manner of its production, which may be called a pansy class, with varieties more like the violet, primrose, or geranium.



Voice pictures

To obtain these pansy forms, about the same quantity of color-paste as for daisy forms must be placed upon the disk, but with considerably more water, sufficient water being required to allow the paste to move freely on



Tree form

it when disturbed by the vibrations of the elastic disk, the petals seeming to shoot out from the centers of motion and then to spread themselves in the water. This class of lower forms usually has its petals in threes, whether one, two, or more sets.

In leaving the floral forms, I may mention that great care and delicacy in singing are demanded for their production, which will afford ample training for any vocalist in regard

to the steady sustaining of notes in intensities from the softest pianissimo to a very loud forte, as every grade of intensity is required in its turn in order to evoke these forms in their various sizes, ranging from that of a pinhead to that of a large-sized daisy.

A voice experiment for you

APPARATUS:

- Several bowls or containers
- Plastic cling wrap
- Sand or fine “sediment” type material, such as polenta or talc
- Water in a spray canister
- A long tube
- A good singing voice

ACTION:

- Stretch the cling wrap over the bowls or containers to make a taut covering.
- Lightly dampen the cling wrap.
- Sprinkle sand, polenta, or talc over the cling wrap.
- Place one end of the tube on the cling wrap.
- Place the mouth of the singer over the other end of the tube.
- Sing.

OBSERVATION:

As the voice causes the cling wrap to vibrate, the sand begins to move into groups in various different shapes, creating pictures. The longer the singing continues, the sharper the pictures become. (In experiments, whole landscapes have been created, also animals.)

CONCLUSION:

With the right formula, the superior knowledge of the Creator, and His wondrous voice, the world was created.

The anti-Genesis attack is not based on evidence, but mind-set

The intense spiritual opposition to the book of Genesis’ account of

creation is in a large part because it demands a **supernatural** God – one **with the power to judge sin**, a most detested Bible teaching in the minds of the New World Order criminals.

Nevertheless, many ordinary people realise that something is dreadfully wrong with society. In reality, the problem is a deep, spiritual one – because we have turned our backs on our Maker.

Cutting themselves off from Him, many are now experiencing a growing spiritual emptiness. May I suggest that there is a hunger which can be satiated only by returning to the source of all our life - the Creator - from whom we have alienated ourselves?

* * * * *

With “bubbles” of polonium discovered “instantly” frozen into the earth’s foundation rocks, we have seen that an instant creation now makes sense.

But how should we regard the changes that have undeniably occurred in many life forms since the original creation? Do these support the evolution theory against the ‘crazy’ Genesis claim that everything follows its “kind”? Let’s explore down that road...

For further fascinating information on the polonium halos see Robert Gentry’s book *Creation’s Tiny Mystery*. (Knoxville, Tennessee: Earth Science Associates, 1992)

For powerful, easy to follow scientific evidence that creation, not evolution, is the story of our planet, see Jonathan Gray’s book *The Discovery That’s Toppling Evolution*. (<http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_hc.html >)

3 Genesis: “Each after his kind”

AREN'T THE CHANGES IN SPECIES, EVOLUTION?

OBJECTION: But changes occur within all living things. That is evolution.

Al Coster was loved by his pupils and respected by the staff for his forthright integrity. But he was about to be fired from his teaching position at Thornton High School. Why? Because some influential people accused him of mentioning the creation option in his science classes.

If you didn't know, there's a battle going on in the schools today. While evolution is being taught, creation is forbidden. Why? Because “it is not science.” Science is what you can test in the laboratory. But Creation? It **can neither be tested nor falsified**. Therefore Creation is **not science**. It is religion. It is not science. That's the argument.

Surprise! Darwin himself was the first to prove this claim **wrong**. As a theology student, Darwin knew that Genesis chapter 1 said ten times, that God created creatures to reproduce their own basic kind. Here, for your interest, are those ten references:

- “ *every tree yielding fruit **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:11)
- “ *and herb yielding seed **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:12)
- “ *seed was in itself, **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:12)
- “ *bring forth abundantly, **after their kind.***” (Gen.1:21)
- “ *every winged fowl **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:21)
- “ *the living creature **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:24)

- “ *beast of the earth **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:24)
- “ *the beast of the earth **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:25)
- “ *the cattle **after their kind.***” (Gen.1:25)
- “ *every thing that creepeth upon the earth **after his kind.***” (Gen.1:25)

Darwin also understood that Genesis said life was not the result of the natural properties of elements and forces on this planet. Life was supernaturally created.

Darwin’s logic was simple: Genesis is proven false IF it can be shown that creatures **don’t** reproduce their own kind – that is, IF single celled **species can evolve** into multi-cellular man.

Darwin’s logic is still valid and Genesis is ***still testable*** (and falsifiable).

And that brings us to a question that arises quite frequently:

When something changes, isn’t it evolving?

QUESTION: What about the many living things that we see changing today? Isn’t that evolution?

IN REALITY: Certainly there is plenty of variation going on. We have endless varieties of dogs, sweet peas, or whatever. We have people with brown, white, black or red skin, with fuzzy hair or straight hair, with blue, hazel or brown eyes, wide noses, narrow noses, thin lips, thick lips, slim or stockier build... the variations are numerous.

Here are the two opposing theories:

- * The evolution theory predicts that one basic life form will change into quite a different life form.
- * Genesis predicts that change will occur within the limits of the same life form, but not cross the boundaries to become a different life form.

So which of these predictions do we see fulfilling in real life?

For starters, the laws of genetics tell us that each basic type, whether dog, butterfly, or human, has *programmed into it* the capacity for **variation within the kind**.

An example of such variation is bugs that become immune to DDT. However, you will observe that this is not a change into another species. It's like humans developing an immunity against measles. This ensures the survival – the permanency, if you like - of the existing kind. Nothing more. **VARIATION IS NOT EVOLUTION** into another type.

Again, that is a demonstrable physical fact.

An original gene pool

There is no scientific explanation as to how genetic information could ever have evolved. In fact, it could no more have evolved than the information in your computer could have evolved. There had to have been an intelligent creator of this information. Any other explanation would be idiotic.

The evidence points to *original genetic pre-programming*. This original gene pool contained all the genetic information that exists today. And this information was placed into each separate life form to ensure that life form's survival in varied circumstances.

Loss, not gain, of genetic information

In a new environment, a living organism simply selects from the large genetic pool it inherited, those genes that will help it survive in that circumstance. In reality, *no* organism has to spend time evolving new features. It has only to select from the genetic information it already possesses.

Adaptation is the built-in ability to modify one's structure to best suit a new environment. Such *adaptation is limited*.

This selecting (known as natural selection) results in loss, *not gain*, of genetic information. Selection *divides* the gene pool. It selects which of its wide genetic pool it wants to use, and drops the rest. This is loss, not

gain, of information.

Does that mean that ***no*** new genetic information evolves?

Mixing and recombining the already existing genes of a particular species can result in, say, differences in feathers, skin or beaks. (We know this from numerous experiments.)

And that is how one original dog type can diversify into many dog varieties. But the basic type does not change. They are all still dogs. No new genes are added, so as to turn a dog into something else. Such variation occurs ***without any addition*** of new genetic information.

Natural selection works only within the existing gene pool of each species (***selecting from what is already there***). Let's say it again. ***No*** truly ***new*** genetic characteristics are acquired in the gene pool.

Selection from among existing genes fails to qualify as evidence for real, uphill evolution. Rather, it is evidence of 'downhill' adaptation into several less-genetically-rich varieties.

In fact, there is NO genetic process known to science that can produce the genetic improvement required for upward evolution. Natural selection ***removes information, while evolution requires an increase in information.***

So you see, variation is a process opposite from evolution.

What about mutations?

What about mutations? Don't they produce evolution? Nice theory, but it was proposed before genetics was discovered. We now know that nature doesn't work that way.

You see, mutations are genetic copying mistakes – and almost always harmful. Overall, mutations degrade genetic information, with genetic information becoming garbled or lost.

No new genes are being produced by mutation. It is simply a selection (or corruption) of what is already there.

For evolution to occur, *would require a gain* of information.

But mutations are unable to add such information. So mutations are useless for evolution.

To put it another way, mutation is neither a programme to direct evolution, nor an energy conversion device to empower it. The same is true of natural selection. To produce true evolution, *a directing code is needed, and an enabling mechanism*. Neither of these has been discovered.

An unbridgeable gap

Inescapably, each organism's DNA programme - inbuilt set of instructions - imposes limits:

- * variations within the "kind", yes.
- * capacity to turn into a different type of organism, no!

Let's say it again. Variation within the same type – yes. There may be wide diversification within the basic type.

But re-design to become another basic type of creature – no. *There is no evolving or crossing over into another basic type*. Change from one basic type, to another, has *never* ever been witnessed. Not anywhere.

The limits of one life form are separated from the limits of the next basic life form by the **unbridged gap**, which also includes sterility. These gaps between different basic life forms cannot be bridged.

That is observable science.

Now isn't this exactly what the book of Genesis has been telling us all along? LIKE ALWAYS BEGETS LIKE. A ground finch can turn into a cactus finch, but it will always be a finch.

Yet, we still hear some dear ones glibly reciting off claims that a reptile turned into – don't laugh – a bird. No DNA law to worry about back then. one assumes. According to the laws of genetics, this is twaddle of the first order.

Where did information come from?

For a one-celled organism to change into a more complex one, vast amounts of functionally useful information *would need to be progressively added* to the genetic code.

And tell me, I pray, where did such information come from? Bacteria, for example, don't have the genetic information to make blood, eyes, bones, and so on. Evolution from, say, amoeba to man, must of necessity involve an ongoing addition of new hereditary information.

Evolution *cannot* explain how this information arose.

It takes three billion (3,000,000,000) of those letters to represent a copy of you.

There is one of those 3-billion-letter messages inside each cell in your body.



Designed to NOT evolve

In any case, did you know that gene code letters have *built in error protection*? Genes store information in long strings of DNA, in the form of chemical letters, called A, T, C and G.

So that genes can be *accurately copied*, each gene consists of two parallel strands of DNA held together by links between the code letters of one strand and those of the other strand.

The two strands are not identical. That is, A's do not link to A's, and so on. Instead, they are complimentary. A's always link to T's; C's always link to G's.

Donail MacDonaill of Trinity College, Dublin, studied that pattern of linkages between letters. And he found that they form a *parity code*



Each nucleotide base (or letter) on one DNA strand interlocks with a specific partner on the other strand.

Together they then form a base pair of letters.

*Three pairs of letters form a code for one **amino acid**.*

The order in which the pairs are arranged on a DNA strand determines the information contained in that strand.

Genetic information is contained in the myriad combinations of pairs throughout the length of the DNA molecule.

similar to computer codes, to minimise mistakes during the electronic transfer of information. (*Nature* science update, www.nature.com/nsu September 18, 2002)

No one would be so naïve as to believe modern electronic *parity codes* could have evolved by chance. They were carefully planned by software designers. The parity code found in DNA is further evidence that the genetic code was *deliberately created*.

It also reminds us that DNA is designed to maintain accurate copies and *avoid changes* in the information it carries. *This means it was designed to NOT evolve* - but rather to reproduce its own kind forever.

This makes evolution scientifically impossible.

Genesis is pure science: so it's very unwelcome!

On the other hand, hasn't Genesis been telling us that every living thing reproduces "*after its kind*"? And what God said is recorded in every cell of our bodies and in every cell of the animals and in every cell of every plant. And experimental science proves that they are obeying His instructions, replicating the same DNA message passed on by the parents – except where disease or drugs have interfered with the code.

Tell me, then, is the Genesis creation account some unscientific myth, or true science?

I know. Someone will ask, if it is really science, why isn't it taught in the centres of learning? Why is it fiercely excluded?

You probably have some idea by now.

And – are you sitting down? – here is a headline released on June 4, 2009, in *Times Online*:

"One in seven scientists say colleagues fake data"

News reporter Hannah Devlin opens with this shocking revelation: "Faking scientific data and failing to report commercial conflicts of interest are far more prevalent than previously thought, a study suggests."

The simple fact is that the *ideological battle* is bigger than most of us realise. The New World Order gang, swilling in their trillions of dollars, have a pretty tight grip on the propaganda machine. This includes the media, the film industry and education. It is crucial to their plan of mass mind control.

And because, from the powerful information in Genesis, we can be wide awake to their little game, they have never welcomed Genesis into their playpen.

4 Genesis: “Eve the mother of all”

CREATED FROM DUST AND BONES?

OBJECTION: The creation of Adam from the dust and of Eve from one of his bones is “anti-scientific nonsense”.

The Nazis, during the Holocaust, used human skin as a substitute for leather in the manufacture of lampshades and shoes, among other things. They placed a commercial value on the human skin. And on human hair, teeth and other portions of their victims.

We shudder when we think of it. These monsters considered the lives of their victims as worthless. But they were prepared to place a value on selected portions of their physical bodies.

Today, there are men involved in the planning of strategies for the emerging New World Order, who regard human beings as no more than useless mouths to feed – whom it would be better to eliminate.

How much are you worth?

The truth is, you are worth more than you think! You are wonderfully made. Your Creator places an inestimable value upon you as a person. Don’t forget it!

Mariah Carey insured her legs for a billion dollars. It was all part of her deal to become the new face of Gillette for its Legs-of-a-Goddess campaign. Mariah Carey was a singer, so it was her voice that was her fortune. So why not insure her voice? After all, her legs were just the two

digitally-elongated planks of flesh that allowed her to totter about on stage.

The truth is, Gillette didn't care a cracker about her voice – because Gillette doesn't have a product out that entices women into shaving their *voice* - so instead Mariah Carey insured her legs – which a Gillette razor could shave quite fine!

It's not a new thing for celebrities to insure their body parts. It was once rumoured that Jennifer Lopez had insured her buttocks. But, if you were to place a money value upon the actual materials that make up your body, that would be a different story.

Well, in money terms, how much is one's body worth?

Your body is composed of the same minerals as your back garden. Genesis records that our bodies are composed "*of the dust of the ground*". (Gen.2:7)

Quite a lot of people have spent a great deal of human and financial resources calculating the composition of, prior to the decomposition of, and the worth, or worthlessness of, the human body.

When we total the monetary value of the ELEMENTS in our bodies AND the value of the average person's SKIN, we arrive at a net worth of \$4.50!

This value is, however, subject to change, due to stock market fluctuations. Since the studies leading to this conclusion were conducted by the US and by Japan respectively, it might be wise to consult the New York Stock Exchange and the Nikkei Index before deciding when to sell!

The US Bureau of Chemistry and Soils invested many a hard-earned tax dollar in calculating the chemical and mineral composition of the human body, which breaks down as follows:

- ☐ 65% Oxygen
- ☐ 18% Carbon
- ☐ 10% Hydrogen
- ☐ 3% Nitrogen
- ☐ 1.5% Calcium
- ☐ 1% Phosphorous
- ☐ 0.35% Potassium
- ☐ 0.25% Sulphur
- ☐ 0.15% Sodium

- ☐ 0.15% Chlorine
- ☐ 0.05% Magnesium
- ☐ 0.0004% Iron
- ☐ 0.00004% Iodine

Additionally, it was discovered that our bodies contain trace quantities of fluorine, silicon, manganese, zinc, copper, aluminium, and arsenic.

Together, all of the above **ELEMENTS** amount to **less than one dollar!**

Our most valuable asset is our skin, which the Japanese have invested their time and money into measuring.

The method the Imperial State Institute for Nutrition at Tokyo has developed for measuring the amount of a person's skin is to take a naked person, and to apply a strong, thin paper to every surface of his body. After the paper dries, they carefully remove it, cut it into small pieces, and painstakingly total the person's measurements.

Cut and dried, the average person is the proud owner of fourteen to eighteen square feet of skin, with the variables in this figure being height, weight, and breast size. Basing the skin's value on the selling price of cowhide, which is approximately 25 cents per square foot, **the value of an average person's SKIN is about \$3.50.**

Total it up:

* The elements comprising your body	- \$1
* Your skin	- <u>\$3.50</u>
TOTAL:	\$4.50

And this leads us to **three physical scientific facts** – facts which, as we now discover, support the Genesis account.

1. Man is made from the elements of the ground

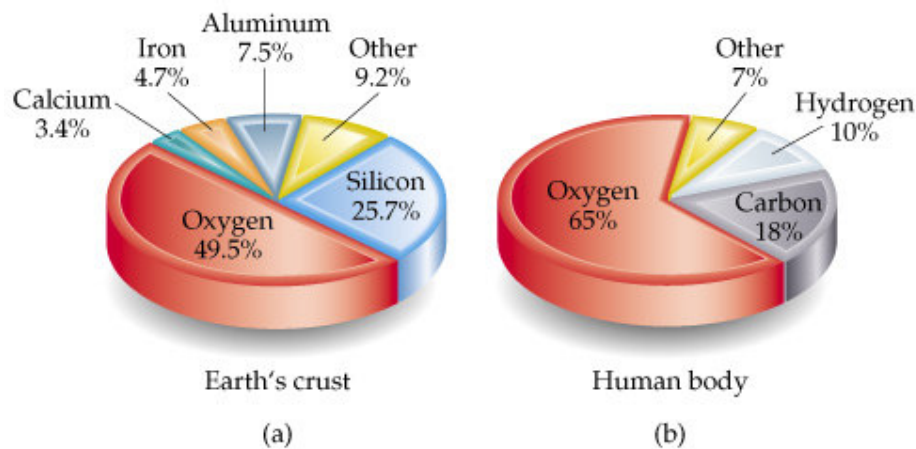
“And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.”
(Gen.2:7)

When it comes to the book of Genesis, there is always some clown who is prepared to state that you can't take its statements literally.

IT IS CLAIMED: The creation of Adam is ‘anti-scientific nonsense’. God did not create Adam from the dust, as Genesis says.

IN REALITY: Not made from the dust? Yet when man’s body dies, does it not decompose and turn again to dust?

Yes, the information in Genesis is totally scientific. We have already listed the chief materials and minerals that make up the human body. It should now be noted that these are all found on the surface of the ground. Oxygen is the most abundant element in the ground, and carbon is likewise abundant in the ground, as is hydrogen. In fact, the 59 elements found in the human body are all found in the ground.



Man, *homo*, is so called because he is made from the soil, *humus*, as it says in the book of Genesis: “*And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground*” (Gen. 2:7).

The Greek word for man is *antropos* [*anthropos*], because he looks upwards, raised up from the ground to contemplate his Creator.

Another tick for Genesis.

2. A portion taken from one person's body can form the basis of another totally complete human being.

The book of Genesis says: *"And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and **he slept**: and he **took one of his ribs**, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; and the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, **made he a woman**, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of man."* (Gen.2:21-23)

You might call that the first surgical operation.

IT IS CLAIMED: What rot! The first woman was not created from the first man. She evolved in the womb of her part monkey mother, developed into a fetus, was born and raised by her hominid parents.

IN REALITY: And then, I suppose, she ran into Adam one day and said "hey, do your parents look as freaky as mine?" Hmmm...

I'll go for the Genesis account.

This demonstrates the wisdom of the Creator. By making woman from man, she was to be regarded by Adam as part of him - *"bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh."* (Genesis 2:23).

Can you imagine Adam waking up from his surgical operation and opening his eyes and looking at that ravishingly beautiful living form beside him? "WOW...MAN!" he exclaims. "Is this something wonderful! She's my mate!" WOMAN! Woman = from man. Part of man himself.

The Creator very cleverly chose this manner of creating Eve so as to establish a bond between a man and a woman. Woman came out of man, so when a woman and man are married, "the two become one flesh". (Genesis 2:24)

In choosing to take a rib from Adam for the creation of woman, the Creator was making a statement. A bone was not taken from Adam's

head to imply the woman was to dominate him, nor from his foot to imply she was to be stepped on, but from a rib close to his heart – to be loved. The symbolism of this physical act speaks loudly of an intended equality, a love relationship.

The symbolism of this physical act has important spiritual significance for all future time. It is quoted throughout the rest of the Bible with regards to marriage. Jesus accepted the Genesis account as literal history. He reiterates this creation account and its significance in Matthew 19:5 and in Mark 10:8.

The bone marrow of Adam's rib would have permitted what is called "somatic cloning" for the production of Eve. Oh, and something else. A specialist bone surgeon confirmed in 1997 that the rib is the only human bone which can be made to grow again if removed!

The bottom line, of course, is this: Science has confirmed that a portion taken from one person's body can form the basis of another totally complete human being.

Upon this truth is based the modern concept of cloning.

Another tick for Genesis.

ADAM AND EVE THE VERY FIRST PEOPLE

Yes, Adam was a real person. He was the first man on this planet.

The name "*Adam*" is a Hebrew word meaning "*man*." It also means "*red earth*". This is fitting, since the Bible says that Adam was the first man that ever lived. (1 Cor.15:45 – "***the first man Adam***") And he was formed from the earth. This text tells us emphatically that "THE FIRST MAN [WAS] Adam."

The Bible also declares that there was no death of man or animals until man violated spiritual laws. It informs us that when Adam sinned (violated the spiritual law), death came. And that **before Adam there was no death**. "*Death reigned FROM Adam.*" (Rom.5:14)

It also assures us that ALL of us are descendants of that first man Adam. “**ALL nations**” are “**of one blood.**” (Acts 17:26) Or to put it another way, ALL of mankind is in Adam. And “**IN ADAM ALL die...**” (1 Cor.15:22)

In harmony with that, Genesis states that all of us are descended from Adam’s wife Eve. “**Eve... the mother of ALL living.**” (Gen.3:20)

In summary, the ancient Scriptures declare:

- * Adam was the very first man ever.
- * Before Adam there was no death.
- * All people on earth are descended from Adam.
- * All people on earth are descended from Eve.

As we shall see shortly, DNA testing has finally backed this up.

3. There was one single mother for the whole human race

“*And Adam called his wife’s name Eve; because she was the mother of all living.*” (Gen.3:20)

For some time, scientists have been using the DNA found in small organelles in our cells called mitochondria. Through studying mitochondrial DNA it is possible to trace one’s ancestry. Mitochondrial DNA is passed on to us by our mothers alone.

Recent studies of mitochondrial DNA led to a very important discovery.

The evidence indicated that all human beings alive on earth today are descended from the same original woman. This woman they call the “mitochondrial Eve”.

Trained in molecular biology, they [the scientists] looked at an international assortment of genes and picked up a trail of DNA that led them to a single woman from whom we are all descended. (John Tierney, Lynda Wright, and Karen Springen, “The Search for Adam and Eve,” *Newsweek*, January 11, 1988, p.46)

While the location of this first woman is debated, some saying Africa, others claiming Asia or the Middle East, the fact of one original woman

apparently is not. (Ann Gibbons, “Mitochondrial Eve: Wounded, But Not Dead Yet”, *Science*, August 14, 1992, pp. 873-875)

The point is that all human beings on earth are descended from the same original mother.

The reasons for the use of mitochondrial DNA in this search, rather than the DNA in the nucleus of our cells, is that mitochondrial DNA is passed on to us, by our mothers alone. In this it is unique.

DATING THE FIRST WOMAN

The next question was, how long ago did this first woman live?

In order to find the approximate date of the original mother, scientists examined the rate of mutations (that is, alterations) in the Mitochondrial Organelles.

They looked at the most distant branches of the family tree – the DNA types most different from one another – and worked backward to figure out how many steps it would have taken for Eve’s original DNA to mutate into these different types. They assumed that these mutations occurred at a regular rate – a controversial assumption that might be wrong. (Tierney, Wright, and Springen, p. 50)

Using this complicated technique it was postulated that the first mother of the human race appeared on earth 100,000 to 200,000 years ago.

Even by using their very slow-gradual-change idea of evolutionism, the result yielded a date for the first woman that was uncomfortably less than the million or more years of evolutionary belief.

This finding also conflicts with the Genesis record that mankind was placed on earth about 6,000 years ago.

More recent research, however, changed the mutation rate dating. For the first time, ***actually observed data*** was used. The result was troubling for the evolutionists. It showed that the rate of mutation is far more rapid than previously calculated.

In an article published in *Science* magazine of January 2, 1998, published by the American Association for the Advancement of Science, researchers announced:

Mitochondrial DNA appears to mutate much faster than expected, prompting new DNA forensics procedures and raising troublesome questions about the dating of evolutionary events. In 1991, Russians exhumed a Siberian grave containing nine skeletons thought to be the remains of the last Russian tsar, Nicholas II, and his family and retinue, who were shot by firing squad in 1918. But two bodies were missing, so no one could be absolutely certain of the identity of the remains. And DNA testing done in 1992 – expected to settle the issue quickly – instead raised a new mystery. (Ann Gibbons, “Calibrating the Mitochondrial Clock”, *Science*, January 2, 1998, p. 28)

The mystery concerned dates relating to the clock rate. It appears that mutations occur at a much faster rate than assumed. Independent investigations have verified the faster rate.

Based upon evidence first presented at the First International Workshop on Human Mitochondrial DNA held in Washington DC during October 25-28, 1997, the prestigious weekly *Science* magazine of January 2, 1998, stated that:

Regardless of the cause, evolutionists are most concerned about the effect of a faster mutation rate. For example, researchers have calculated that ‘mitochondrial Eve’ – the woman whose mtDNA was ancestral to that in all living people – lived 100,000 to 200,000 years ago in Africa. Using the new clock [based on the latest scientific evidence], she would be a mere 6000 years old.” (*Ibid.*, p. 29)

How remarkable! If you didn’t already know, **this 6,000 year scenario since our first common mother agrees precisely with the biblical dating.** It is an uncomfortable result for evolutionism.

But we can rest assured that bigoted evolutionists will ignore the evidence staring them in the face. They had not hidden the evidence but they have denied it. Notice how the article goes on to say, “No one thinks that’s the case [that Eve is 6000 years old], but at what point should models switch from one mtDNA time zone to the other?” (*Ibid.*)

“No one thinks that...?” Perhaps Ann Gibbons should have written, “No evolutionist thinks that’s the case.”

Instead of accepting the truth of their findings, evolutionary scientists are searching for an escape hatch to get around this evidence.

So much for scientific objectivity!

Another tick for Genesis.

Scientific sense

Here, again, are four statements that can be – and now have been - scientifically tested:

1. Man is made of the dust of the ground. (Gen.2:7)
2. A portion taken from one person’s body can form the basis of another totally complete human being. (Gen.2:21-22) Upon this truth is based the modern concept of cloning.
3. Eve - just one woman - was the mother of all living persons. (Gen.3:20)
4. She lived about 6,000 years ago (according to combined biblical chronologies).

If anyone wants to disagree, I present this challenge: Go back over everything in this chapter and find a flaw in it. Or else admit the truth.

I submit to you that where statements in Genesis can be tested by physical, testable science, they pass the test. Nothing about the history it contains can be **disproved**.

Of course, for some of its accounts, no one can, at this much later time in history, furnish proof. Yet, absence of evidence for an event does not invalidate it – otherwise most events of history would have to be rejected.

Eve from Adam’s chest: racial memory

The book of Genesis says: *“And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the*

flesh instead thereof; and the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of man.” (Gen.2:21-23)

Again, this is not some Jewish fable. Rather, it is enshrined in the racial memory of mankind. Recollections of the event are found repeated around the world.

Even then, you may wonder, should we really place much credence in ancient legends that back up Genesis?

Why not? Too often, I’m afraid, we have been prone to dismiss folklore and mythology out of hand. But is this not unscientific, especially since traditions have often led us to discover physical remains?

LEGENDS ARE USUALLY BASED ON A CORE OF FACT

Pertinently, William Prescott, the great Americanologist, reminds us: “A nation may pass away and leave only the memory of its existence, but the stories of science it has gathered up will endure forever.” (Andrew Tomas, *We Are Not the First*. London: Sphere, 1971)

You see, folklore is a fossil of history. It preserves history in the guise of colourful tales. Far from being a collection of fables, it is a recital of actual past events, even though from generation to generation some facts have become distorted or forgotten.

We must face it: traditions are usually based on a core of fact.

Take the legend of Troy. No scholar took the *Iliad* or the *Odyssey* of Homer as history. But Schliemann, putting faith in it, discovered the "mythical" city of Troy. The *Iliad* spoke of a cup decorated with doves which Odysseus used. In a shaft Schliemann found that 3,600-year-old cup.

Herodotus told a fabulous story of a distant country where griffins guarded a golden treasure. This land (Altai, or Kin Shan) has now been found, together with ancient gold mines, and decorations from a high culture prominently display the griffin. The vague myth is seen to be a fact.

Mexican Indian legends spoke of a sacred well of sacrifice, into which maidens and jewelry were hurled. Historians dismissed this as a mere tale, until the well, at Chichen Itza, was discovered in the nineteenth century.

More than any document, the Bible was assailed as a collection of fanciful myths. Yet, to the embarrassment of the critics, archaeological discoveries proved time and again that the fabled cities, mythical persons and impossible events were true and reliable reporting in every detail. Indeed, the Bible can now be regarded as the most accurate and trustworthy source of history we possess.

OUR ANCESTRAL MEMORY OF OUR FIRST MOTHER

If we are to credit the collective testimony of all ancient races, our first mother, Eve, was created from a bone of the first man, Adam.

This appears to have been a universal truth, known to everyone in ancient times. It is a claim found in the traditions of the world. Take, for example, this sampling from the South Pacific region:

Easter Island Legend:

“Make-Make (the great God of the universe) rolled earth into a ball, thrust his hand into the middle of it to make a hole, then breathed into the hole. A young man, He-Repa, came out of it. Make-Make said, ‘This is not right!’ He **made He-Repa sleep**. Make-Make took a banana shoot. He **opened He-Repa’s chest** on the left-hand side. The blood flowed onto the banana shoot. Make-Make breathed into the shoot running with blood. Uka, the **young woman, was born.**”

Tahiti Legend (received when Tahiti was first discovered):

“The first human pair were made by the supreme deity Taaroa. After Taaroa had formed the world he created man out of the *araea* (red earth), which was also the food of man until breadfruit was created. One day Taaroa called for the man by name, and when he came he **caused him to fall asleep**, and while he slept he **took out one of his *ivi* (bones), and**

with it made a woman, whom he gave to man to be his wife. The **name of the woman was Ivi** [which is pronounced by the Tahitians as if written *Eve*]. This pair became the progenitors of the human race.”

Samoa (Fakaofo or Bowditch Island) Legend:

“Man had his origin in a small stone or Fakaofo. The stone became changed into a man called Vase-fanu. After a time he thought of making a woman. This he did by collecting a quantity of earth and forming an earth model on the ground. He made a head, body, and legs of earth, then **took out a rib** from his left side and threw it inside the earth model, when suddenly the earth became alive and up started a woman on her feet. He called her **Ivi** (*Eve*) or **rib**. He took her to be his wife and from them sprang the race of men.”

A Dr Turner, who lived in Central Polynesia before the arrival of Europeans, reported: “To this day the children play on the sands making men, body, hands, feet and face and holes for eyes.”

Did sex just evolve?

Sex... or more specifically, sexual reproduction. Have you ever considered it? If this was a result of evolution, then what an incredible number of chance events must have occurred!

Think for a moment about the reproduction system of the male... It is astoundingly complex. And totally different from that of the female, too. It would have needed to evolve completely and independently ***at exactly the same time*** as that of the female. And in close proximity too.

And what about the sperm?...

That would have to evolve also – just to make it compatible with the mechanical and chemical changes evolving ***at the same time*** in the eggs from the female reproductive system.

Then there were the physical and emotional systems of both the male and female...

They would also need to be compatible. Because, if they weren't, they

would drift away from each other and blow all the evolutionary work that was already done.

Was this really possible?

What an incredible series of coincidences would have to take place! And the same for every separate plant and animal in existence!

Perhaps you've never thought about this before. If the evolution of both sexes (involving very different bodies) was not exactly harmonious at each new level of evolution, every species would have died out.

After all, organs can be useful only when developed fully. The eye, for instance, can function only if it is totally complete. A half-evolved organ is of no use.

So what had to happen?

1. There had to be complimentary evolution of both sexes
 - (a) at the same time;
 - (b) in the same location;
 - (c) designed for a perfect fit with each other.
2. Each species had to separately repeat a series of extremely rare beneficial mutations in both female and male offspring.

If sexual reproduction in plants, animals and humans was a result of evolution, an absolutely unbelievable series of chance events would have had to occur *simultaneously* in the same places between pairing males and females.

There could not be repeated attempts at getting it, you understand. Because an individual has only one life. For the change of each cell, there had to be *split-second timing*. The reproductive system had to be changed *in the life span of one individual*. Impossible odds, when you think about it.

So we have

- The creation of man from the ground
- The creation of the first woman from a portion of the man's body

- A single mother for the whole human race alive today – and only about 6,000 years ago
- The matched arrival of two different, but precisely compatible sexual partners – and that for every separate life form.

In a scientific examination of these Genesis claims, it seems that the odds favour Genesis.

Critic, where are you? (Is that him hiding under a rock?)

Never mind, let's ask another question...

Questions such as the following, as well as many others, are addressed in Book 3 of this trilogy, *Modern Religious Myths About Genesis*:

- * If Adam and Eve, the first parents, had two sons, Cain and Abel, then where did Cain get his wife?**
- * Does the language of Genesis suggest that there were life forms and races of men alive before Adam?**

5 Our world before the great disaster

A PERFECT ENVIRONMENT

**OBJECTION: If God is all-powerful,
then why did He make such an imperfect
world – with wastelands of desert and ice,
and hurricanes, droughts and floods?**

As I walked into their village, the natives clicked into culture shock. To them it must have been like a little green man stepping out of a UFO in front of them.

Now, as I sat down to eat with these simple, lovable people in this remote niche of the Amazon headwaters, I looked over them tenderly. Their whole known Planet Earth consisted of ten or so villages scattered a few days' walk in different directions from their village. That was the world. They were aware of no other. They didn't know that the unmapped region in which they lived was, according to civilized thinking, part of Ecuador. Ecuador? What on earth was that?

How, then, could I ever describe to them a television screen in which one can watch people doing things on the opposite side of the globe?

How would they believe me if I told them that with 200 other people I had sat in a giant winged metal box that flew above the clouds fifty times faster than a canoe, then disgorged us back onto the land?

In their simplicity, they would never understand, let alone believe me. It was so far outside their experience.

How, then, can I describe to you the original Planet Earth that existed before the Great Global Disaster?

- Where single tomato plants 30 feet tall could bear 5,000 tomatoes?
- Where women could keep having children at 130 years of age?
- Where men could run for up to 200 miles without exhaustion?
- Where a water canopy above the atmosphere, like a telescopic lense, made the stars seem bigger and closer?
- Where a man or a woman could live for hundreds of years?
- Where tropical palms swayed in the warm breezes of Antarctica.

And yet, this is a world that did exist – as real as our own – as recently as 5,000 years ago. But we have forgotten about it. Why? Because true, scientific earth history has been suppressed. Including the confirmed records of ancient civilizations. And our dating systems, as commonly used, are screwed up.

The facts of this amazing but true ancient Planet Earth are well documented in my books *Dead Men's Secrets* (<<http://www.beforeus.com> >) and *The Killing of Paradise Planet* (<<http://www.beforeus.com/first.php> >) But right now, may I summarise the facts for you, briefly.

CLIMATE: What an amazing world was Planet Earth before the Great Disaster! It had a global environment of springlike loveliness, from pole to pole. No encroaching wastelands of desert or ice, no hurricanes, no droughts or floods. In other words, an environment that was non-stressful.

Geology testifies to this once mild and uniform climate over the entire globe. And there is good reason to believe that this paradise world existed within the memory of the human race.

SURFACE: More of the earth's surface was land, than sea. There were no high mountains forming physical or climatic barriers. Ocean beds were relatively shallow.

There was more, and far superior, living space than the present world offers. That first world contained proportionally more *habitable* land than the world today. The enormous waste deserts of Asia, Africa, America and Australia did not exist.

Its landscape was refreshingly varied, from dry ridge to marshy expanse, from warm tropical valley to mild mountaintop. It was decked with surface mineral riches and lavished with bounties. The gaining of a livelihood must have been easy.

PLANTS AND ANIMALS: There was luxuriance of vegetation, pole to pole. It was a world which yielded food of every kind for man and beast without any great effort on the part of either, a world which could therefore support a population many times greater than our present population.

Plant and animal types were of greater variety than today. They were also more widely and evenly distributed – and of greater size and quality – than their modern descendants. The fossil record shows this.

WATER CANOPY: A vast water envelope above the atmosphere provided a protective blanket for the earth, and a controlled climate similar to that inside a terrarium. This “firmament”, as Genesis terms it (Genesis 1:6-7), not only precluded winds, storms and rain. This virtual wall of water filtered or reflected most of the cosmic and short-wave length radiations that now reach the earth. (For scientific validation of this former canopy, see my book *The Killing of Paradise Planet*.)

Let’s compare today’s world with such a CANOPIED environment.

Today, our equatorial zones get the brunt of the sun’s heat. Polar regions get little heat. Temperatures on this planet are extreme. As a result of these hot and cold air masses meeting turbulently, today’s weather patterns and continual storms are experienced.

The shielding canopy and the resulting diffused sunlight and heat in a terrarium-like environment would result in:

- * a moderate warm climate everywhere
- * no winds, storms, or rain
- * no encroaching wastelands of desert or ice
- * worldwide vegetation more lush than that of today
- * a continual growing season
- * increased atmospheric pressure, promoting rapid healing
- * possible longer life spans
- * possible larger specimens of some plants and animals

Scientific research suggests that instead of rain, a gentle mist rose up to water the face of the earth. The ancient book of Genesis tells us much the same. (Genesis 2:5,6)

It is not mere speculation to describe that first world as a real paradise, because its mummified remains, found in abundance all over the world, do not lie. Just as Egypt's pyramids and the ancient monuments are evidence of once great civilizations, so do the fossils speak eloquently of the glories of a world which has passed away.

POPULATION: Expansion over some two millennia may have produced a population comparable to our own, sufficiently large to cover the earth.

SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY: With the incredible mental faculties of man at that time, tremendous scientific advances were made, advances that we can't even begin to imagine.

Just imagine superior man with a perfect environment, perfect foods with complete nutrition... and no life shortening cosmic radiation.

Add to that the lush scenery. In visible beauty, the world was "perfect". Today's most enchanting islands in the South Seas are a mere echo of that forgotten world.

Certainly, these were optimal circumstances in which to live. Not to mention the comforts gained from high technology, as well.

It looks like we had a wonder world... and somebody blew it.

CORRUPTION AND VIOLENCE: The record states that mankind slid into spiritual bankruptcy. Corruption was widespread. Violence was exploding out of control. The race may have become totally extinct, had not intervention taken place.

PARALLEL WITH TODAY: A population explosion – a proliferation of science and technology – worsening corruption – exploding violence. Does that sound familiar? Genesis contains a warning for us, today.

INTERVENTION: Suddenly the great disaster struck, in which a number of vastly different natural agencies were suddenly orchestrated on an unnatural scale.

FOR FURTHER INFORMATION: The description of the early world given in Genesis is discovered to be scientifically valid.

If you would like to know more, may I recommend *The Killing of Paradise Planet*, which goes into considerable detail, providing scientific evidence for this former world so different from ours, until it was suddenly wiped out by the cosmic disaster known as the Great Flood.
(<http://www.beforeus.com/first.php>)

6 The day Planet Earth died

THE END STRUCK SUDDENLY

OBJECTION: Genesis says the whole world was wiped out by a flood. But that's impossible! Where is the evidence of such an event, anyway?

DISCOVERED:

- Buried alive! From Australia to Alaska: billions of corpses of animals and people.
- Violently mixed: large animals of DEEP sea and land, TOGETHER!
- Elephants and tropical palm trees: SUDDENLY entombed in ice.

TODAY our earth is spoiled and mostly uninhabitable. But this was not always so.

As we saw in the previous chapter, THERE WAS A TIME when everything lived under a giant, protective canopy. The atmosphere was temperature-controlled. It was a paradise planet.

THEN SOMETHING HAPPENED. It was sudden. And a whole world vanished. This sudden disappearance is like a mystery thriller with the last pages torn out... except that...

There are also legends – traditions of racial memory –that speak of such an event. And they recall what really happened. (See *The Killing of Paradise Planet*, pages 76-101.)

The global catastrophe known as the Great Flood is described in Genesis chapters 6 to 8.

IT IS CLAIMED: The story may have originated in some local Middle Eastern flood.

IN REALITY: We have a choice: We can choose to inject our own prejudices into the Genesis report, or we can be willing to learn, and let Genesis speak to us.

When one reads the Genesis report, it soon becomes evident that the writer intended us to believe this was a worldwide event.

The double statement “*all* the high hills, that were under the *whole* heaven, were covered” (Gen.7:19) is practically equivalent to a Hebrew superlative. Even “*the mountains were covered.*” (v.20) This leaves no doubt that the writer is saying that the Flood covered the earth’s entire surface.

But the real shocker is the physical evidence. The killing of a whole planet is the most astonishing true story you’ll ever hear.

The physical forces involved

AXIS TILTED: There is evidence from the present rotation of the earth that sometime in the past its axis has been violently displaced. This event can be scientifically dated. It occurred in the year 2345 BC, and was of such magnitude it would have brought worldwide destruction.

The tilting of the earth’s axis occurred suddenly, jolting the earth into a violent wobble. This let loose tremendous force, which shattered and dislocated the earth’s crust beyond description - sufficient to exert inconceivable geological changes.

The planet shook violently, tearing the crust into gigantic fissures.

EARTHQUAKES OPEN UP WATER BASINS: As the crust of the planet was shattered, enormous underground reservoirs of water were expelled under great pressure. They rushed out over the earth in a

massive swell. The sea began to overflow, sweeping inland, tearing away the land.

VOLCANIC ACTION: The breaking of the surface to a depth of several miles produced terrific strains and friction, which developed pent-up heat. Simultaneously, volcanoes burst out in America, Africa, the Pacific and everywhere else. With a roar, an estimated thirty thousand fiery columns spouted miles high into the sky. Lava also pushed upward from immense cracks in the crust. The volcanoes gave off water vapour in massive quantities, which crashed as torrents of rain on an unimaginable scale.

CANOPY COLLAPSED: Jets of boiling water and of volcanic ash high above the atmosphere pierced the invisible water canopy surrounding the planet. This outer canopy began to disintegrate, to collapse upon the earth. It poured down in such volume and force, the result was disastrous.

TIDAL WAVES: This was not a calm, monotonous rise of water. Colossal tidal waves surged over the planet. Winds of uncontrollable force whipped them to enormous heights. Boulders of up to 18,000 tons were carried hundreds of miles. Some were hurled to levels 2,000 feet higher.

Scientific research indicates that in such an event, twice each day, the oceans would sweep around the world, attaining a maximum every 150 days estimated at 6 miles high at the equator. Such translation waves travelling at 1,000 miles per hour at the equator and proportionately in other latitudes, would certainly leave no dry land anywhere in the world. It would give us a totally competent cause for the production of the geological features we see today.

It is at least a remarkable coincidence that a period of 150 days is twice mentioned in the book of Genesis – in Gen.7:24 and 8:3.

GLOBAL: This was a Flood of global proportions. All the latent forces of nature – volcanoes, earthquakes, waves and hurricanes – were unleashed in a terrible alliance for universal destruction. For a year, their continued action created power for devastation and transportation that is beyond human calculation. Erosion and sedimentation took place on a gigantic scale.

THE FLOOD CAN EXPLAIN MANY OTHERWISE PUZZLING GEOLOGICAL FEATURES OF TODAY'S EARTH.

Fissures of bones

Gripped by the same terror, wild beasts and tame stampeded to higher ground. In great numbers they thronged together – until the waters rose and covered them. All over the world, the cataclysm uprooted trees and threw sand and rocks over animals which had gathered on mountains. Thousands of feet up, many were washed into crevices, thrown together in wild confusion in a common grave.

The result is that on every continent, and in numerous places, are vast “fossil graveyards”, where masses of creatures have been swept to a sudden death in their millions. These areas are packed with land and sea creatures from different habitats and even from different climatic regions – all mixed and buried together in a completely unnatural way.

For months longer, the storm raged. Unceasingly, in repeating 12 hour cycles, the mighty ebb and flow wore down the earth's surface as each wave returned with its debris. Travelling long distances under water, fast moving currents of suspended mud and sand spread out over thousands of square miles. The ebb and flow laid down successive strata, alternately burying land organisms and water creatures, to ultimately fossilise. As well as laying down strata, the Flood sorted debris into piles here and there.

THESE FOSSIL GRAVEYARDS SPEAK NOT OF SLOW EVOLUTIONARY DEVELOPMENT AND BURIAL, BUT OF A VIOLENT GLOBAL FLOOD.

Sea life cemeteries

FISH: SUDDEN DEATH: Throughout the globe, billions of fossilised fish show indications of violent death. They are found in a pose of agony, with no mark of a scavenger's attack. Their perfectly preserved remains testify to mass burial within hours – not days – of death, before decomposition could occur.

SEA AND LAND LIFE MIXED, INLAND: Frequently, remains of whales and other **deep-sea** creatures are found far removed from the sea, mixed in with land animals, plants and trees.

SEA LIFE ON MOUNTAINS: Marine fossils are found on mountain tops hundreds of miles from any sea, or buried under clay, sand, gravel and other debris sometimes a mile deep.

FOSSILS PROVE A GREAT FLOOD: Fossils in every part of the world testify to a colossal Flood. Only one force known to man is capable of accomplishing such a sudden, wholesale destruction, followed by an immediate burial. That force is water.

Human relics















FOUND WHERE THEY SHOULD NOT BE: Have you heard? Not infrequently, buried human remains are found in “12 million year old” coal, or “200 million year old” rock – or mingled with or lying beneath the remains of so-called “prehistoric” animals, such as dinosaurs. This is bad news for evolution theory. Yes, man-made artefacts are being found up to 10,000 feet below the ground, and in all supposed evolutionary “ages” of strata. See the chart on the next page. (Copious documentation is available in my book *Surprise Witness*. <http://www.beforeus.com/second.php>)

EVOLUTION THEORY INADEQUATE: Now, please just think about this. If man existed as far back as the earliest life forms, then doesn't this negate the theory of progressive evolutionary sequence?

Do these human remains indicate that man is older than we thought? Or rather that these water-deposited rocks were laid down more recently, that the rock “ages” are younger? Let me give you a clue. Rocks “160 million to 3 billion years old” from Hawaii, were later found to be only 168 years old! (*Science*, vol.162, p.265. *Journal of Geophysical Research*, vol.73, p.460. *American Journal of Science*, vol.262, p.154)). Rocks “millions to billions of years old” from Russia were actually proven to be less than 200 years old.

Does this suggest the outrageous possibility that the present state of the earth's crust has not resulted from long aeons of uniformity at all, but largely by natural processes acting in concert rapidly and “recently”?

HUMAN REMAINS

Pleistocene		Skull Skeleton Skeleton Pelvis Jaw Upper arm bone	Olmo, Italy Clichy, France Gally Hill, England Natchez, North America Abbeville, Africa Kanapoi, Africa
Pliocene		Skull Skull Skull Jaw Footprints Footprints Sandal prints	Calaveras, California Castenedolo, Italy Table Mt., California Foxhall, England Laetolil, Africa Tulsa, Oklahoma Carson City, Nevada
Miocene		Skull Jaw Shoe print	Stanford, California Tuscany, Italy Gobi Desert, Asia
Eocene		Skull Tooth	Germany Bear Creek, Montana
Paleocene		Cast iron cube	Wolfsegg, Austria
Cretaceous		Skeletons (2) Skull Tooth; footprints Foot, shoe prints Cast metal nodules	La Sal, Utah Gilman, Colorado Glen Rose, Texas Carrizo Valley, Oklahoma Saint-Jean de Liver, France
Jurassic		Leg & foot bones Footprint	Spring Valley, Nevada Parkersburg, W. Virginia
Triassic		Sandal footprint Footprint	Pershing County, Nevada Mt. Victoria, Australia
Permian		Footprints	St. Louis, Missouri
Carboniferous		Footprints Iron pot Tools Gold chain Footprints Hieroglyphics Inscription Imprinted slab Concrete wall	Bera, Kentucky Oklahoma Aixen-Provence, France Illinois Missouri Hammondsville, Ohio Philadelphia, Pennsylvania Webster City, Iowa Heavener, Oklahoma
Devonian		Precision pattern	Pittsburgh, Pa.
Silurian		Skeleton	Franklin County, Mo.
Ordovician		Sandal print Metal Hammer	Lake Windermere, England London, Texas
Cambrian		Sandal, footprints Iron bands	Antelope Springs, Utah Lochmarea, Scotland

Look carefully. Do you see what's wrong here? What if the so-called "Jurassic age", "Carboniferous age", and so on, are not real, separate

“ages” in time at all? But that dinosaurs, coal beds and humans were buried more or less at the same time, and not millions of years apart?

This may shock you. But a dating cover-up is in full swing. And some evolutionists such as Robert Lee are honest enough to admit that “...the accepted dates are actually selected dates. ‘This whole blessed thing is nothing but 13th century alchemy, and it all depends on which funny paper you read.’” (Robert E. Lee, “Radiocarbon: Ages in Error”, *Anthropological Journal of Canada*, vol.19-3, 1981, pp.9-29) It’s a scam. And honest people like you and me have been caught up in it, unsuspectingly.

A GLOBAL FLOOD FITS THE EVIDENCE BETTER: Are you ready for the truth? The “evolutionary ages” for rock strata are fictitious. Most stratified rock has come from debris laid down by water on a mega scale during the Great Flood. And this is when most animal and plant fossils, as well as most artefacts, footprints and human remains were buried.

If a global Flood did occur...

1. TRADITIONS

If a global Flood did occur, there should be many cultural traditions of the flood story. There are.

2. SEDIMENTS

Sedimentary rock is WATER-LAID ROCK – laid by silt deposition as moving waters slow down.

If a global Flood did occur, we should expect thick water-laid sediments to form most of the surface crust of the earth’s land area. And they do. There is intercontinental linking evidence. Of the earth’s land surface, 75 percent is covered by sedimentary rock. Which means that the major factor in the formation of the present surface of the earth has been *water movement ON A GLOBAL SCALE*.

The very structure of the rock strata reveals that the earth’s surface must have been torn up for miles down and re-laid by the action of water. In some places there is evidence that it occurred as far as ten miles down!

The earth's crust has been CHURNED into a mass of water, vegetation, animal life and rubble. This is *prima facie* evidence that the entire surface of the earth has, indeed, been under water fairly recently.

And something else. Professor M.E. Clark, of the University of Illinois, and Dr Henry Voss have formulated a model which shows the global sedimentary context formed by the effect of the moon on the waters of a theoretical global Flood. The academic impact is this: There is definitely evidence of a global Flood – and there is a global association in the laminated layers of sedimentary rock.

In summary, the WHOLE surface of the earth is covered by

- (a) mostly sedimentary rock (water laid sediment that has since hardened into rock) and
- (b) igneous rock (from the massive volcanic flows that occurred during the Flood).

Mostly, however, it is sediment. For any publication to claim otherwise means that the author is either lying or is ignorant of the evidence.

3. MOUNTAINS COVERED

If a global Flood did occur, we should find evidence on mountain tops. We do.

The fact that sedimentary rock covers not only the lowlands, but also the mountain peaks, shows that not only was the water movement global, but that it also extended above the tops of the mountain ranges. And crests of mountains contain marine fossils. Evidently the mountains were once under water.

4. RAPIDLY BURIED REMAINS

If a global Flood did occur, there should be buried remains of all manner of life forms found mixed up in the sedimentary layers. There are.

All over the earth are extensive fossil graveyards which show evidence of rapid, violent burial and fast lithification (turning to stone).

The uncovering of death pits of all types of animals (land and sea animals MIXED TOGETHER) in areas throughout the earth points *not* to a *local* but a *general* event.

5. *HUMAN RELICS BURIED AT ALL LEVELS*

If a global Flood occurred, we should find so-called “higher animal” skeletons (including man) at many different depths in the flood-produced rocks. We do.

Not enough water?

OBJECTION: A worldwide Flood that covered the earth would require 5 times the total amount of water on the earth, including water in rocks.

IN REALITY: Evidently the objector is thinking that the water would have to cover Mt Everest, and so on, at their present heights. However, it's an established fact that most of the earth's mountains are of recent formation – in historical times, that is. There is evidence that the Alps, the Andes, the Himalayas, the Rockies, and so on were uplifted suddenly and violently (and recorded in human memory) during the upheavals that accompanied the crustal adjustments (relief of stress) after the massive geological upheavals of the Flood. (See my book, *The Corpse Came Back*, chapter 19.)

So very likely, the pre-Flood mountains were lower than today, and required much less water to cover them.

However, about 71 percent of our globe is covered by water and 29 percent is dry land. The average depth of the ocean is 13,000 feet – and the average height of the land is only 2,300 feet. So the ocean is, on average, 5½ times deeper than the land is high. That means there is about 18 times more water below sea level than there is dry land above it. If all the land now above the sea were dumped into the ocean depths, it would fill only one eighteenth of the oceans.



Sea water volume is 18 times land volume

Again, if all the land were smoothed out (no mountains, no ocean basins), the water would completely cover it to a depth of 1½ miles – 7,800 feet of water over the entire surface of the earth.

We also know that sea beds can rise and continents sink. This being so there is no difficulty whatever in finding enough water, even for a universal flood. (See an article by Lt. Col. Davies, in *Journal of Transactions of the Victoria Institute*. London, 1930, p.95)

ONE FLOOD OR MANY LOCAL FLOODS?: A series of local floods could not have produced the features seen today in the earth's crust. Only a global Flood can adequately explain all the geological phenomena. It is not our purpose in this work to go into the evidence in detail. Sufficient to state that the Great Flood is supported by ***evidence more abundant than that for any other event in history.***

Before dismissing this, the skeptic is challenged to thoughtfully examine the evidence presented in *Surprise Witness*, which was published especially to provide an easy digest of the massive global Flood evidence. (<<http://www.beforeus.com/second.php>>)

UNPARALLELED VIOLENCE: We are talking about an event that encompassed volcanic and tectonic activity on an unprecedented scale; simultaneous tidal waves, hurricanes, continents splitting apart and ocean basins forming.

Every square foot of the earth's surface must have been profoundly altered. The events of that year affect us still today. The whole climate of the earth was altered; the volcanic and earthquake activity that persists today began then. Our lives are so different today – **SIMPLY BECAUSE THAT EVENT OCCURRED!**

There can be no question that the Great Flood marked a clear break in history. This Genesis account is evidently true. But what about the post-Flood stories found in Genesis? Are these only legends, or might they likewise be real history? Let's see...

For explosive information about the widespread dating error and cover-up, see Jonathan Gray's expose, *The Great Dating Blunder*.

7 How languages broke up

THE FIRST NEW WORLD ORDER

OBJECTION: The book of Genesis speaks of a tower where a one world language was suddenly confused and split into many languages. What a crazy story! Human languages have evolved from simple animal sounds to ever more perfect languages as man has evolved.

That afternoon in 2002, as Gary Vey of *ViewZone* magazine trudged out of the dry canyon, it was blistering hot.

But he was excited. He had just re-located some very, very, very ancient petroglyphs.

The remote canyons of the Pergatoire River nestle in the Comanche National Grassland, just south of La Junta, Colorado. The river is fed by winter snow in the higher Rocky Mountains. But when Gary went in again in 2002, the river was almost dry.

One global language

There was something special about these particular petroglyphics. The ancient alphabetic symbols were *virtually identical* to those found in the Har Karkom region of the Negev desert of Israel, in South Australia, in Yemen, in Chile (South America), and in the British Isles!

This same ancient alphabet has now been found on six continents. Vey has termed it “*The First Tongue*”.

According to the book of Genesis, all once spoke the same language.
*“And the whole earth was of **one language**, and of one speech.”*
 (Gen.11:1)

Genesis recounts a dramatic event that changed this. This is where our investigation will now take us.



Virtually identical across the world

THE GLOBAL SURVEYORS


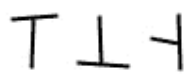
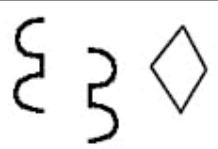






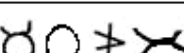
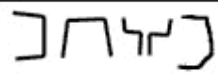
The Flood survivors, landing in the mountains of eastern Turkey, found themselves on a changed and damaged planet.

It was necessary to relocate resources. And so, within centuries the rapidly expanding population sent out exploratory expeditions.

My book *Dead Men's Secrets* contains some maps copied in the Middle Ages from older maps thousands of years old – maps that appear to have resulted from this ancient world survey. (See Jonathan Gray, *Dead Men's Secrets*, pp.34-41. <<http://www.beforeus.com>>)

These early surveyors left their traces on every continent. The petroglyphs they left behind all over the world are evidence of an original mother tongue belonging to a one-time world culture.

Below are the 22 symbols that were the first common alphabet.

Old Negev alphabet from Colorado with corresponding Hebrew sounds.					
	Qof (Q)			Zayin (Z)	
	Peh (P/F)			Chet (Ch)	
	Feh (F)			Yod (Y)	
	He (H)			Lamed (L)	
	Mem (M)			Nun (N)	
	Khaf (K/Kh)			Tsadeh (Ts)	
	Tav (T)			Resh (R)	
	Shin (Sh/S)			Alef (silent)	
	Vav (V)			Dalet (D)	
	Bet (B/V)				
	Gimel (G)				

ONE ORIGINAL LANGUAGE

The fact that the whole world once spoke the same language survives in the racial memory of many people.

A fragmentary Sumerian tablet copied by the Oxford cuneiformist Oliver Gurney speaks of a time when “the whole universe” spoke “in one tongue.”

The epic tale *Enmerkar and the Lord of Araita*, published by Professor S.N. Kramer, of the University of Pennsylvania, records that all mankind spoke one and the same language until Enki, the Sumerian god of wisdom, confounded their speech.

The idea that there was a time when all men spoke the same language is found also in ancient Egyptian and Indian writings.

Even the *Popul Vuh*, a book of the Central American Maya records that “those who gazed at the rising of the sun [the ancestors who formerly lived eastward of the Americas]... had but one language... before going west.”

Yes, one language... and a unified alphabet. Again, this is not the place to go into detail on the one original language that covered the earth. But evidence for an original single worldwide language is substantial. Some of this evidence is covered in detail in my book *The Corpse Came Back*. (<http://www.before.us.com/third.php>)

The Tower of Babel

The book of Genesis next tells of the exodus of a group of people from the area first settled by the Flood survivor Noah and his descendants after the Flood.

“And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there. And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime [bitumen] had they for mortar. And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven: and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.” (Gen.11:2-4)

The presence of oil here, in the Middle Eastern region, about 4,000 years after the time of Babel, indicates that an ample supply of bitumen most likely could have been obtained by the builders of this infamous city and tower, just as Genesis says.

THE TOWER REBELLION

The tower, dedicated “unto heaven” (to the worship of the host of heaven, an astrological system) was the actual headquarters of a rebel movement which aimed to seize control of the world.

According to the record, building the tower was a case of clear-cut DEFIANCE of the Creator. In the first place, God had promised never to

send another universal Flood; the tower builders said God had lied (and they decided that to protect themselves from another Flood they should build a great tower whose top would reach above the deepest flood waters). In the second place, the Flood had destroyed only the rebels. The Creator Himself had protected the faithful. The tower builders were saying that they would live exactly as they pleased, and would protect themselves. God was superfluous.

DEITY INTERVENES

Once again, the Creator intervened. He did this in a manner that caused them to comply with His command to “replenish the earth”.

The leader of the rebels, Nimrod, persuaded the people that they could find security without God if they stayed together under his rule.

There was an urgency about being connected. They conceived a plan for a united world government. Oppressive and cruel laws were planned by Nimrod and his henchmen. Had they gone unchecked, they would have demoralised the world in its infancy.

The symbol of their defiance – the tower of Babel – was already reaching high above the plain.

Then it happened. Many factors were involved. But, in brief, there was an interruption to their plan.

THE LANGUAGE CONFOUNDED:

“Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another’s speech. So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city... Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.” (Gen.11:7-9)

They no longer could understand each other. There was a sudden multiplication of languages.

One can imagine the scene. Maybe the ones next to certain others could understand one another, but those below them only heard gibberish when

the next call came for materials. In any case, the scene must have been one of chaos. It is impossible to imagine what it must have been like. All we are told is that at some point after this “confusion” of languages, they ceased work on the city and were scattered “abroad upon the face of all the earth”.

Family groups were not able to get on with other family groups. People now wanted to get away from each other. The inevitable result was that those who understood each other moved off together.

So began the DISPERSION from the Mesopotamian plain in all directions, north, south, east and west.

“Languages birthplace”

Some interesting studies have revealed that *languages originated in this very region*. For example, the English language can be traced all the way back to farmers in this part of the Middle East! (<http://www.auckland.ac.nz/cir_newsevents/index.cfm?action=display_news&news_id=3393>)

Imagine a town where SUDDENLY many, many different languages were spoken.

In the confusion, what would you do? Firstly, everyone would find those who speak their own language. Then decisions would be made about what to do next. It would be almost impossible to continue planting, harvesting, building, with those to whom you cannot communicate. Especially back then when there were no translators.

The next step would most likely be to find a separate place to live.

You’d need room to raise your crops; fields for your flocks; and space to build a permanent settlement. Some language groups may set out and settle 25 miles from the original town; others would have to travel 100 miles or even more before they could find a suitable location.

As time passed, the land nearby would already be taken and new groups would have to travel further and further away to find a suitable location. Some might be more ambitious and travel much, much further – perhaps 1,000 miles away.

But, as with all things, there would survive remnants of many, many of the original language groups in the general area.

And today, nowhere else on earth can you find so many different tongues being spoken in such a small area:

Many ancient races and tribes still inhabit the Caucasus [the mountains above Noah's Ark which form the northern barrier of the Araxes plain] **and the Armenian plateau of eastern Anatolia. As many as fifty different languages and dialects are spoken in this vast and, in parts, inaccessible region.**" (*Legends of the World*", edited by Richard Cavendish, 1989, p.137)

Strabo informs us (Book XI,5), that **no less than seventy Dialects were spoken in the country, which even then was called the Mountain of Languages.** (*The New Learned History Encyclopaedia*, 1922, col VIII, p.6,743)

The further one travels from this area, the fewer languages we find being spoken in an area (except in cases of immigration, such as in the USA and Australia). This evidence alone is sufficient to show where the languages began.

LANGUAGE GROUPS

Genesis chapter 10 gives us a photo-start breakdown of the 46 basic language groups which were formed into nations at the time of the Babel dispersion.

This figure is not unrealistic in regard to the active language groups in the world today.

From these originals, the languages of the earth have developed.

Of course, there are now thousands of languages, but there is a definite grouping of them (Aboriginal, Sino-Tibetic, Dravidian, and so on.) Careful study of these basic modern language groups shows that they are not in excess of the number allowed for in Genesis 10.

While the biblical story of the confusion of tongues and the forced worldwide dispersion from Babel is commonly ridiculed by skeptics,

there is certainly no better explanation for the origin of the different families of languages. The evolution theory is unable to adequately account for even the origin of human language itself.

NO EVOLUTION OF LANGUAGE

According to evolution theory, human languages are developing from meaningless sounds to ever more perfect languages.

But if the origin of man, including his ability to speak, occurred by evolution, then may I put up my hand and ask two questions?

1. Why are the most HIGHLY STRUCTURED, COMPLEX and SOPHISTICATED languages found among the most backward and culturally “primitive” tribes? Most of them are actually more complicated in grammar than the tongues spoken by civilised people.
2. Why is there no such thing as a primitive language? In every culture on the planet, the language is complex.

Look, this needs explaining. The idea of SIMPLE languages among primitive people does not coincide with fact.

A gulf between human and animal sounds

The languages of even the most ‘primitive’ tribes are extremely complex – and are removed by a great gulf from the chatterings of the most ‘advanced’ apes, as well as other animals.

All animal sounds are more or less on the same level of complexity. Human speech is absolutely distinct from animal communication. And the ability to articulate and communicate even abstract concepts is the basic aspect of human culture.

No society is known at any point in history which did not have a fully developed language.

We find no support at all for any kind of evolutionary development of language. There is NO EVIDENCE nor any EXPLANATION for such an assumed evolution of language.

Certainly there has been much change, but **not in a simple-to-complex sequence**.

WORLDWIDE TRADITIONS OF THE BABEL TONGUES CONFUSION

The Babel explanation of languages is not just some biblical fairytale. This ancient event has been burnt into the racial memory of mankind as a whole.

The native Mexican chronicler, Ixtlilxochitl, in his *Relaciones*, records an ancient Toltec tradition that the descendants of the Flood survivors built a “zacuali” (tower) of great height. After this, their tongues became confused and, not understanding one another, they went to different parts of the world. The 7 families who spoke the Toltec language set out for the New World. They wandered 104 years over large extents of land and water. Finally they arrived at Huehue Tlapallan in the year One Flint, 520 years after the Flood.

Other peoples, such as the Chaldeans, the Hindus and the Chiapa of the Americas, to name a few, were discovered with a tradition which not only agrees with the Genesis account of the manner in which Babel was built, but with the confusion of tongues and the subsequent dispersal.

Even the isolated inhabitants of the Fijian Islands recorded a tradition of a building just like the Tower of Babel.

There are also Australian Aboriginal tribal legends which appear to be corrupted memories of those events up to, and including, the time they separated from the other peoples. These legends include the “dispersion of the tongues” which occurred at Babel.

In his writings, the Greek historian Hestaeus speaks of “olden traditions” that the people who escaped the Deluge came to Senaar (compare this with the biblical “Shinar” in Genesis 11:2) but were driven away from there by a diversity of tongues.

Yes, the event of the dispersion of tongues is firmly fixed in our global racial memory. Once more, the Genesis account turns out to be no myth.

A thorough scientific and historical treatment of the whole languages story may be found in my book *What Happened to the Tower of Babel?* (http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_hc.html)

8 Did Genesis “steal” foreign fables?

A COPY-CAT FAKE?

OBJECTION: The book of Genesis is not an original information source. It was copy-catted from 6,000 year old Sumerian or Babylonian mythical texts.

In April, 2008, dozens of infants in eastern China began dying from malnutrition from drinking fake milk formula with virtually no nutritional value.

Up to 200 babies who were fed the formula developed what doctors called “big head disease,” causing the infants’ heads to grow abnormally large while their bodies wasted away. Some babies died within three days of being fed the formula, while others were hospitalized after parents discovered their children were sick.

The formulae were passed off as authentic baby food, and sold in shops in Fuyang, a city in Anhui.

In some formulae the protein accounted for just one-sixth of the standard protein content, but in others it was a mere one-hundredth of the total amount, or about one-eighteenth of the standard content, said a specialist with the Fuyang Health Department’s Food Supervision Bureau. Important minerals such as iron and zinc were completely missing.

Chinese with little money and understanding of the risks were the most common victims. Most consumers were naïve about health and consumer issues. They didn’t suspect the authenticity of products and were more liable to be cheated.

Things are not always as they seem.

Milk formulae are just the tip of an iceberg when it comes to counterfeit products. Did you know that brake linings made of compressed grass, sawdust or cardboard that wear out quickly, are being retailed in our Western world? On sale are counterfeit parts that fail prematurely and lead to serious accidents.

According to Gallup Consulting and the US Chamber of Commerce, 64 percent of counterfeit electrical goods are purchased at legitimate shops and retailers. And according to a 2007 Consumer Survey conducted by the Electrical Safety Foundation International (ESFI), Rosslyn, Va., 60 percent of Americans admitted that they would not be able to distinguish a counterfeit electrical product from a genuine one.

Just because something is sold in a legitimate shop, or promoted by a respected college, or enjoys popular acceptance, is no guarantee that it is safe, genuine, or trustworthy.

And just because some “scholar” thinks a document is 6,000 years old, doesn’t make it that old.

Yes, there are some Sumerian documents for which one writer has been claiming an age of 6,000 years. Thus, says he, they are an authority for the claim that extraterrestrials crossbred with evolved sub-humans to produce real humans.

It is easier to claim something twice than to prove it once.

Well, for starters, let’s consider the age of those Sumerian writings. Are they really 6,000 years old?

To arrive at the answer will require a certain amount of background information. Summarised, here’s what the evidence will show as to dating:

1. That a global Flood wiped out all civilizations in 2345 BC.
2. That the survivors and their descendants spoke a language akin to proto-Hebrew.
3. That a sudden confusion of languages occurred, resulting in the people being scattered.

4. That Sumeria was one of the new civilizations that emerged from this event with its own language.
5. That the Sumerian tablets can be no older, therefore, than this event.

There is a popular theory doing the rounds that human history has gone on virtually uninterrupted since perhaps 10,000 BC. And that no worldwide catastrophe such as the Great Flood has intervened since that time. In other words, human history is older than Genesis states.

Writers speak of this matter-of-factly, unemotionally, as if this presented no problem. Dates and data are bandied about as if everything were cut and dried.

Well, the “experts” putting out this tale have been snookered! And they don’t even know it yet.

Let me give you a brief peep at some of the evidence for the above five propositions, that needs to be looked at.

Step 1 – The Great Flood:

According to at least eight independent physical witnesses, catastrophe on a global scale did indeed *reshape the earth’s surface* and *re-set the dating clocks* just over 4,350 years ago.

- **Glaciers** – Numerous glaciers have been confirmed as no older than about 4,000 years.
- **Inland lakes** – These have been scientifically calculated at no older than about 4,000 years.
- **River deltas** – Careful measurements and calculations show major deltas like the Mississippi to be no older than 3,600 to 5,000 years.
- **Waterfalls** – Great waterfalls like the Niagara can be shown to be no older than 4,000 years.
- **Trees** – The oldest trees on earth are no older than about 4,000 years.
- **Deserts** – The oldest and largest desert (the Sahara) is now confirmed to be only 4,000 years of age.

- ***Earth's axis tilting*** – Scientific measurement of progressive axis recovery shows that the earth's axis was violently tilted in 2345 BC – an event that would have resulted in total surface destruction of the planet.
- Present ***world population*** of 6.7 billion, at a statistically accepted average doubling per 150 years, converges backward 30 generations to a handful of people about 4,500 years ago.

I invite you to study this amazing synchronisation of natural time clocks. We shall not enlarge on it here. However, if you want supporting evidence, it is carefully documented in my book *The Corpse Came Back*, chapter 22. (<<http://www.beforeus.com/third.php> >)

NATURAL PROCESSES AGREE ON THE TIMING

We have the same approximate dating from these varied methods in all parts of the planet. According to these witnesses, the Genesis timing for the ***Great Flood*** is correct.

Oh? says someone with a mathematical mind. Does the Bible really pinpoint an historical date for the Flood?

Yes, it supplies a series of chronologies which, linked together, bring us to the time of the Flood. And, if you will, I shall walk you through the connections, step by step.

Please follow this carefully. (Remember that as you calculate backwards through the BC era, numbers increase. That is, instead of subtracting, you ***add*** the numbers together.)

We start by calculating back from a known, fixed date in history. This is the destruction of Jerusalem by the Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BC. This event brought an end to the kingdom of Judah. The accuracy of this date can be astronomically verified by Babylonian records. (Edwin R. Thiele, *The Mysterious Numbers of the Hebrew Kings*)

Now take this date – 586 BC - and add to it the years of the kings of Judah after Solomon. The chronology of these kings was very carefully preserved and documented in Jewish history. According to the Old Testament records, these years of reign totalled 345.

So add these - $586 + 345 = 931$ BC – to get the last year of Solomon’s reign. Since we know that Solomon reigned for 40 years, then his first year would have been 970 BC. We must be sure and count the first year. This gives us 970 BC.

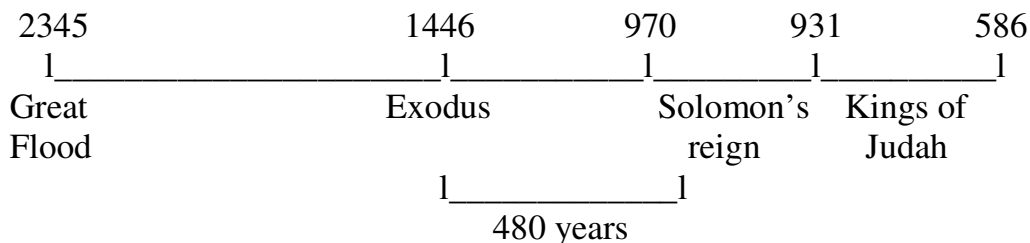
The next time marker is Solomon’s fourth year. Reckoning inclusively, this would be 967 BC. And why do we need to include this in our calculations? Because this is a time peg for another event: *“And it came to pass **in the four hundred and eightieth year after the children of Israel were come out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon’s reign** over Israel, in the month Zif, which is the second month, that he began to build the house of the Lord.”* (1 Kings 6:1)

According to that historical passage, Solomon’s fourth year, 967 BC, was the 480th year from the Exodus of the Hebrews from Egypt. $967 + 480 = 1446$ (counting inclusively).

The Scripture states also that from Abraham’s call to sacrifice Isaac (according to the sacrificial “law”), until the Exodus, was 430 years. This is when the covenant with Abraham was confirmed.- *“because thou hast obeyed my voice.”* (Compare Gal.3:17,18 ; Gen.22:16-18 ; Gen.15:13 ; Ex.12:40-41) Note that the Scripture does not say Abraham’s offspring would be in bondage for 430 years, but that their “sojourning” was for 430 years. The portion of this sojourning spent in Egypt was only 260 years, from 1706 to 1446 BC.

To arrive at the date of the Great Flood, you then add the chronological information supplied in the book of Genesis. (Gen.21:5; 17:21-25; 16:16; 12:4; 11:10-32)

This brings you to the beginning and ending dates of the Great Flood - around 2345 to 2344 BC.



Please keep in mind that this, as all dates, is approximate, due to the various kings of Judah not necessarily fulfilling the full 12 months of

their first or last years of reign. However, we believe that the above dates fall within a 3 or 4 year margin of accuracy.

From this exercise we discover that the Genesis date for the Flood is in harmony with the timing given by each of the eight natural “clocks” that we noted earlier.

The inference from all of these is that every natural process had a new beginning after a massive worldwide cataclysm.

INTEGRITY OF THE GENESIS DATES

After testing the evidence, many an honest skeptic has unashamedly admitted his mistake. There comes to mind David Davidson, who for many years was Consultant Engineer for the City of Leeds, England. At first, Davidson was an agnostic. However,

After fourteen years of chronological research, Davidson reached [to him] the astonishing conclusion that **Biblical dates** were historically **accurate**, that the independently formed ‘Babylonian and Egyptian chronological datings... confirm the chronological statements of the Hebrew books. (D. Davidson and H. Aldersmith, *The Great Pyramid: Its Divine Message*, Vol. 1. London: Williams and Norgate, Ltd., 1936, p.303)

Noted archaeologist Siegfried Horn found that discoveries in the ruins of Hazor, Shechem and other cities likewise **confirmed biblical dates**. (Siegfried H. Horn, *Records of the Past Illuminate the Bible*. Washington, D.C.: Review and Herald Publishing Association, 1975, pp.19,20)

Again, Nelson Glueck, one of the greatest of all Middle East archaeologists, swears that:

It may be stated categorically that no archaeological discovery has ever controverted a Biblical reference. (Nelson Glueck, *Rivers in the Desert: History of Negev*. Philadelphia: Jewish Publications Society of America, 1969, p.31)

The trend of new evidence is leading many archaeologists to align their dates increasingly closer to those given in the book of Genesis.

So where does this leave all that claptrap about Genesis being just a myth?

It appears that Genesis is ***better informed than its critics.***

Step 2 – Survivors’ descendants dispersed:

Each one of five **ancient pagan European genealogies** separately traces its family tree back to the survivors of the Great Flood. These are the genealogies of the ancient royal houses of Ireland, Britain, Norway, Denmark and Iceland.

It is important to note that these royal family trees were **not influenced** by the biblical record. Firstly, each of them was **strictly pagan**. Secondly, they developed in **isolation** from each other and from the Hebrews until much later times.

These separate genealogies each begin with the same ancestral names for the first 5 generations. This reveals an initial huddling of tribes more or less close together for the first ***five generations*** after the Flood before they split. Only after the 5th generation do the genealogies diverge. (Bill Cooper, *After the Flood*. Chichester: New Wine Press, 1995)

This scenario agrees precisely with the book of Genesis, which specifically states that it was in the ***fifth generation*** after the Flood that the ***dispersion of nations*** from Babel occurred:

*“Shem [son of Noah]... begat **Arphaxad** two years after the flood.”
“And Arphaxad begat **Salah**; and Salah begat **Eber**. And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was **Peleg**; for **in his days was the earth divided.**” (Gen.11:10 ; 10:24-25)*

Here we see five generations:

Shem	>	Arphaxad	>	Salah	>	Eber	>	Peleg
1		2		3		4		5

Another ancient (non-biblical) document, the Book of Jasher, provides a separate witness to the same fact. It indicates that the dispersion of nations ***occurred close to the birth of Peleg***. The Book of Jasher records that *“in his [Peleg’s] days the sons of men were divided, AND in the*

latter days, ***the earth was divided.***” (*The Book of Jasher*. New York: M.M. Noah and A.S. Gould, 1840. Transl. c.1830, ch.7 v.19)

From the end of the Flood (in **2344 BC**), Genesis links the generations thus: 2 + 35 + 30 + 34 years (Gen.11:10,12,14,16), to arrive at Peleg’s birth in **2244 BC**. It now appears that Peleg (meaning “division”) was named in memory of that significant event which occurred around the time of his birth – the dispersion of the people from Babel.

Independent calculations by the noted anthropologist linguist, Terrence Kaufmann, unintentionally support this general period of time given to us in Genesis in a remarkable manner. A study was undertaken in the language of the Maya of Central America. Norman Hammond reports:

It is accepted that all Maya languages derive from a single extinct ancestor, known as proto-Mayan, and the antiquity of this ancestor has been estimated by a technique known as glottochronology or lexicostatistics, developed and applied to Mesoamerican languages by the late Morris Swadesh. The basic assumption (not universally accepted by linguists) is that over a given period, say 1,000 years, all languages will change to approximately the same extent, in this case 14%: two languages of common parentage, separated for 1,000 years, will **each** have changed 14% of their vocabulary, and since the same words need not have been changed in each language, they will in fact share 74% of cognate, related words (74% being 86% of the 86% remaining unchanged in each language), according to the calculations of Terrence Kaufmann. Thus the Mayan language family began to break up from the common proto-Mayan before 2000 BC, and retains a common 26% - 35% of cognate words: the linguistic reconstruction suggests that the Maya came into existence as a separate entity more than four thousand years ago, and recent archaeological work not only confirms this, but indicates an even greater antiquity for the Maya as a cultural entity. (Norman Hammond, *Ancient Maya Civilization*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1982, pp.92,93)

The noted archaeologist, Professor W.F. Albright, suggested that the Tower of Babel incident and the dispersion of the races (a story which he took seriously) should be dated to the 22nd century BC.

Interestingly, a surprising number of “new” civilisations that suddenly appear are dated to approximately 2000 BC!

As far as we know, there is no sign that any language spoken today has had a shorter history or a slower development than any other.

In summary:

1. The Great Flood occurred from 2345 to 2344 BC.
2. The scattering of the Babel builders into separate tribal states with their own different languages occurred during the 5th generation after the Flood, around 2244 BC.

Step 3 – Sumeria arises:

The dispersed nations did not spring up until after the Babel event, that is, ***after 2244 BC***. There is ***nothing in archaeology which requires an earlier date for any nation***. (See *UFO Aliens: The Deadly Secret*, chapters 30 to 32; *The Corpse Came Back*, ch. 18.)

Some of these nations, such as the Chinese, maintained numerical records. The historical beginning of China’s 4,000 years of unbroken dynastic culture and civilization is marked by the establishment of China’s first dynasty, the Xia dynasty in 2205 BC. You will note that this is just a few years after the dispersion from Babel.

Step 4 – Sumerian texts:

Now, regarding the claim that the Sumerian texts are 6,000 years old. Since the new nations with their new languages (including the Sumerian) did not emerge until ***after the splitting up of languages at Babel***, then it follows that the Sumerian language texts of Mesopotamia go back no earlier than that same general time, around 2200 BC.

Yes, that’s pretty old – but not old enough for Genesis to have been copied from it. In a later chapter we shall discover just how old Genesis is. Nevertheless, for anyone who is still wondering about the following claim, we shall now consider it from another angle.

IT IS CLAIMED: The “creation” story in the book of Genesis was plagiarized from the Babylonian/Sumerian Creation myth.

IN REALITY: This claim was first aired in the 1800s, when the science of archaeology was in its infancy. And it is still peddled by some writers who are unaware of discoveries since.

How did this idea get started? Well, when the various fragments of the **Babylonian** tablets were discovered, it was noticed that the writers had recorded their “creation” series on **six tablets**.

Some critics observed that the biblical **book of Genesis** spoke of creation as having occurred over **six days**. So now they jumped at the Babylonian discovery and put out the rumour that these Babylonian tablets would prove to be the originals of the Bible story.

But **this was before** the Babylonian fragments (edited from **Sumerian** texts) were pieced together and deciphered.

Then it was discovered that nowhere in the Babylonian account is there any suggestion of the creation of the world in six days, or even in six periods.

The only valid similarity between the Bible and the Babylonian tablets is that the Genesis narrative is divided into six days, numbered 1 to 6, and that the Babylonian accounts of Creation are almost invariably written on six tablets – with a late appendix added as the seventh book, as a commentary on the 50 sacred Sumerian titles of Marduk.

Let’s compare the Babylonian Creation tablets with the biblical Genesis account:

Genesis	Babylonian Creation Tablets
Day 1. Light	Tablet 1. Birth of the gods, their rebellion and threatened destruction.
Day 2. Atmosphere and water	Tablet 2. Tiamat prepares for battle. Marduk agrees to fight her.
Day 3. Land and vegetation	Tablet 3. The gods are summoned and wail bitterly at their threatened destruction

Day 4. Sun, moon and stars visible	Tablet 4. Marduk promoted to rank of “god”. He receives his weapons for the fight (these are described at length). Defeats Tiamut, splits her in half like a fish and <i>thus makes heaven and earth</i> .
Day 5. Fish and birds	Tablet 5. Astronomical poem.
Day 6. Land animals and man	Tablet 6. Kingu who made Tiamut to rebel is bound and as a punishment his arteries are severed and <i>man created from his blood</i> . The 600 gods are grouped. Marduk builds Babylon where all the gods assemble.

Do you notice the difference? A comparison of the two accounts shows clearly that Genesis owes nothing whatever to the Babylonian tablets.

It is not reasonable to imagine that such crude accounts of gods and goddesses plotting war amongst themselves, smashing skulls, getting drunk and similar activities, could be the basis of the first chapters of the Bible.

When George Smith discovered the first Babylonian fragment in the British Museum in 1872, he imagined that it referred to the creation of animals. Now we know that the animals referred to were the “monsters” created in order to fight Tiamut.

The old theory of the supposed similarities between the Bible and the Babylonian tablets was founded on the “expectation” that discoveries would provide the missing links. Excavation has proved this hope to be false.

IT IS CLAIMED: Whoever wrote Genesis simply stripped the old Sumerian or Babylonian account of all its mythical and legendary elements.

IN REALITY: One would expect this idea to have died long before now, but it is still peddled on the Internet!

It should be obvious that if any such “stripping” had taken place there would be nothing left with which to construct a narrative of Creation.

Kenneth Kitchen of the University of Liverpool, compares the various ancient accounts with the Genesis account:

The common assumption that the Hebrew account is simply a purged and simplified version of the Babylonian legend is fallacious on methodological grounds. In the Ancient Near East, the rule is that simple accounts or traditions may give rise (by accretion and embellishment) to elaborate legends, but not vice versa. In the Ancient Orient, legends were not simplified or turned into pseudo-history (historicized) as has been assumed for early Genesis. (Kenneth A. Kitchen, *Ancient Orient and the Old Testament*, p.89)

Millar Burrows of Yale University, points to the fact that “Mere legend or fiction would inevitably betray itself by anachronisms and incongruities.” (M. Burrows, *What Mean These Stones?* New York: Meridian Books, 1956, p. 278) But this is not the case with the biblical records.

A scrutiny of the Babylonian texts reveals that they represent **not an original source, but a hopeless corruption** of an original source. They do demonstrate at an early period the introduction of dozens of contemporary gods into the Creation tablets.

On the other hand, the records preserved to us in Genesis are pure and free from all these corruptions which penetrated into the Babylonian copies.

The Trustees of the British Museum, in *The Babylonian Legends of the Creation and the Fight Between Bel and the Dragon*, declare that “the fundamental conceptions of the Babylonian and Hebrew accounts are **essentially different.**”

From his direct research, archaeologist Sir Ernest Budge agrees: “It must be pointed out that there is **no evidence at all** that the two accounts of the creation which are given in the early chapters of Genesis, are derived from the seven tablets.” (*Babylonian Life and History*)

Oriental scholar Alfred Jeremias, in his work, *The Old Testament in the Light of the Ancient East*, concurs: “**The prevailing assumption of a literary dependence** of the Biblical records of creation upon Babylonian texts **is very frail.**”

To an impartial reader, the book of Genesis bears the hallmarks of an authentic, original and superior document.

What a pity that critics (and even some theologians), instead of keeping abreast of modern archaeological research, continue to make clownish comments about Genesis “borrowings” from Sumerian/Babylonian sources!

So Genesis was plagiarised from “6,000 year old” Babylonian/Sumerian sources? Er, yes.... The evidence is all around us, of course. Just like the evidence for the Jolly Green Giant.

Go for the best

Okay, let’s get serious now. Suppose you are planning to build a house. Won’t you want your builder to lay the best foundation? And to use the best materials – not rusty or rotten second-hand junk? And, of course, you will want the purest water possible to come through your pipes, right?

This has relevance to our next chapter... go for the BEST!

9 Compared: Genesis and other documents

GO FOR THE BEST!

OBJECTION: Genesis is an inferior copy of stories previously recorded by other civilizations.

The judge eyed the two witnesses.

Witness A had presented just a simple, coherent, honest account of the incident. Witness B had stumbled his way through, contradicting himself, messing up his story.

Which witness do you think had the credibility, in the judge's eyes?

Of course you know!

Simpler, more coherent

One thing becomes crystal clear as you place the book of Genesis side by side with the records of any of the ancient nations. The book of Genesis tells a *simpler, more coherent* story.

It does not bear the marks of the superstitious, the magical or the grotesque, which occur in other ancient texts.

A more scientific version

Would you like an example? Very well. Let's look at the *specifications of Noah's Ark*.

Notice how the Babylonian/Assyrian Flood account describes the survival vessel. The *Gilgamesh Epic*, in lines 57 through 61, states that its floor space was one 'iku', a measurement which has been translated to mean 3,600 square metres or approximately one acre.

It reads:

*One iku was its floor space, one hundred and twenty cubits each was the **height** of its walls; one hundred twenty cubits measured each **side** of its deck.*

This leads to but one conclusion – **the boat was an exact cube!**

You only have to ask an engineer. And he'll inform you that such a crudely designed cubic vessel would be a disaster. It would tend to keep turning with each gust of wind, as if caught in a gigantic whirlpool!

Now **compare that with** the description of the Ark in the book of Genesis:

*The **length** of the ark shall be three hundred cubits, the **breadth** of it fifty cubits, and the **height** of it thirty cubits. (Gen.6:15)*

The survival vessel is described as having a ratio of six to one (300 cubits by 50 - Gen.6:15). From a point of stability and rolling, that is about as perfect as can be desired.

Some of today's giant tankers have a ratio of seven to one. In modern engineering terms, the specifications recorded in Genesis are **of perfect proportions**.

George Dickie, a Scottish architect, from specifications for Noah's Ark *taken out of the book of Genesis*, designed the well-known battleship *Oregon*.

As a flagship of the US navy, it led convoys, visited almost every notable port in the world and met every test of seaworthiness, including a fierce typhoon.

Here's what the editor of the *Los Angeles Times*, said of the *Oregon*:

One of the surprising facts of history is that it took 2,000 years for the science of marine engineering to develop the highest type of sea-going craft, when the secrets of the true dimensions for the greatest carrying power, combined with the least resistance of the waves, rested all that time in the book of Genesis.

Doesn't that lift Genesis out of the realm of a fanciful tale and into the category of an **up-to-date, reliable report**? (For some of the questions that skeptics raise concerning Noah's Ark, see my book *The Killing of Paradise Planet*, ch.13. <<http://www.beforeus.com/first.php>>)

If there is still a skeptic around, think again. It is apparent that the book of Genesis bears the stamp of a **sophisticated and accurate document**!

Genesis versus other ancient accounts

Its record is *straightforward, connected and concise*. It stands in a class by itself when compared with other versions for **meaningful** transmission of information.

If the law of cause and effect has any meaning at all – that is, that the effect cannot be greater than its cause – then there can be no doubt that the confused and cumbersome writings of the Sumerians do not represent an original source, but have been corrupted from the simplicity of the original source.

Comparing the Sumerian tablets with Genesis, there are a number of important *differences*. Alexander Heidel has carefully analysed these. He concludes that even though there are definite similarities, these areas of agreement are apparently caused by the two stories having been based on the same *event*, NOT the same account. (Alexander Heidel, *The Gilgamesh Epic and Old Testament*, pp.224-258)

Here are five ways in which the book of Genesis can be seen as a document superior to virtually all of the others.

1. HISTORICAL PRECISION COMPARED TO OTHER RECORDS

One obvious difference from other ancient documents is its **objective, historical character**. The religions of the ancient world did not even postulate a historical basis. The greatest of Middle Eastern archaeologists, Professor William Albright, notes:

In Egypt and Babylonia, in Assyria and Phoenicia, in Greece and Rome, we look in vain for anything comparable. There is nothing like it in the tradition of the Germanic peoples. Neither India nor China can produce anything similar. (Louis Finklestein , ed. Wm. Albright, essay: "The Biblical period", *The Jews, Their History, Culture, and Religion*. Vol.1, 3rd ed. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1960, p.3)

Because the basic theme of Genesis is so absolutely dependent on the facts of history, its chronology is in the **strongest contrast** with that of other nations. Chronologies of the nations have **no beginning**. They emerge from the unknown, and their earliest dates are **hazy and uncertain**. But from the very beginning, ***Bible chronology is defined with the utmost precision.***

Egypt:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Babylonia:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Assyria:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Phoenicia:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
Greece:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
India:	Beginning vague, hazy, uncertain..... later period KNOWN
GENESIS chronology:	DETAILED FROM BEGINNING..... later period KNOWN

I think Francis Hitching said it well:

The grand sweep of the Old Testament is the finest record of ancient history existing in the world today, the most readable and the most secure in its description of long-buried events....

Compared with it, the records from Egypt and Babylon are fragmented and ambiguous. (Francis Hitching, *The World Atlas of Mysteries*. London: Pan Books Ltd., 1978, p. 168)

The Genesis account is given in concise (and precise) language that bespeaks historical fact.

2. NOT SPOILT BY LOCAL COLOUR

It is interesting to note how **nations commonly ‘beefed up’ a story for impact**. Their various reports of the Great Flood illustrate this well. Many tribal versions ‘relocated’ the landing place of the survival vessel to **the nearest high mountain**, to add impact to their Flood story.

By contrast, the Genesis record does not. It simply states that the Ark landed “upon the mountains of Ararat.” (Gen.8:14) This was **a distant land** of which the Hebrews had no personal knowledge. This factor testifies to the Genesis account’s **unbending fidelity to fact**.

3. ITS MORAL FORCE

Here is something else worth considering. The moral force that emerges from the Genesis account is almost completely missing in the Babylonian tradition.

Whichever way you compare it, one is struck by the inferiority of the Babylonian to the Genesis account.

4. OLDER THAN OTHER DOCUMENTS

Genesis is demonstrably **older** than any other Middle Eastern document, as we shall see in coming chapters.

Eminent archaeologist William F. Albright points out that the archaic features contained in the Genesis record **date it BEFORE any Mesopotamian version** that is “preserved in cuneiform sources” (such as the Babylonian Epic of Gilgamesh and the Assyrian Epic of Atrahasis). (W.F. Albright, *Yahweh and the Gods of Canaan*. London: Athlone Press, 1968, p.86. See also: Clifford Wilson, *Crash Go the Chariots*. New York: Lancer Books, 1972, pp.45-51. Wilson, *The Chariots Still Crash*. Old Tappan, N.J.: Fleming H. Revell and Co., 1976, pp.129-140)

5. ITS DETAILS CONFIRMED BY ARCHAEOLOGY

More recently, a wealth of **details** found within it have been **confirmed by archaeological discovery**. (The evidence on this would fill volumes.)

The earlier view that the biblical data were suspect and even likely to be false, unless corroborated by other independent facts, is more and more giving way to the view that, by and large, the biblical accounts are **more likely to be true than false**.

I am forced by the evidence to agree with Sir Isaac Newton that “there are **more sure marks of authenticity** in the Bible than in any [secular] history.”

In the above five respects, Genesis is **UNLIKE** any ancient document we possess.

It towers head and shoulders above every known document of the ancient world. It stands in a class by itself, for meaningful transmission of information.

Critics give up – but others remain unaware

It was not long ago that critical scholars thought that any who believed in Genesis were beneath notice, from a scholarly standpoint, because they refused to accept the impressive findings of the critics! They loved to ridicule the biblical dates.

These critics assumed they knew better 4,000 years after the event than writers who lived in the times immediately after the events.

In response, the most eminent of all Middle East archaeologists Professor William Albright, after examining the critics’ dating philosophy and the flawed reasoning that prompted it, observed, “This is typical of the **utter absurdity of much so-called ‘critical’ work** in the Biblical field.”

One should question the reliability of some Sumerian records instead of always doubting the Bible’s statements. When the truth is known, it will

be seen that the Bible is *the standard by which all else can be safely judged*.

Supposed flaws in the Genesis record have simply been caused by our ignorance. Nobody had enough knowledge on the subject, let alone to refute it.

Today there is no excuse. And many critics have admitted their mistake.

Yet others persist, always doubting, the one mechanically repeating the other – simply because they have not kept up with the discoveries. One suspects that many are too apathetic, bigoted and lazy to make the attempt, while others are tools of a well-oiled anti-Bible propaganda machine, that knows it can fool most of the people most of the time.

And this machine, run by the New World Order moguls, is deadly.

They know that knowledge is power. So their agenda includes keeping you from knowing that you are a child of the Creator, whose limitless power is available to you. If they can prevent you from knowing and believing this, they think their job will be easier when it comes to executing their wipe-out of most people alive on the earth.

No wonder Genesis bugs them so much!

10 Did later priests plot and pretend?

DID THE WRITERS CONSPIRE?

OBJECTION: Differences in style and differences in names for God show that different writers slapped Genesis together long after the supposed events in the book. Names of people and cities were just made up!

Oh, how good to be back home from exile! And so the group got their heads together.

“Look,” said one of them, “we need to copy down some of those great legends we heard from the Babylonians.”

“Yes,” nodded another. “And while we’re at it, let’s weave in some of our best tribal folk tales. If we do this right, we’ll have a hit on our hands.”

So these schemers got to work. Jewish priestly scribes, they may have been. Their names don’t matter. Just call them J and E and P and D.

And hey presto! The Old Testament books, including Genesis, came together. Many of the people, places and events were just made up.

Well, that’s the tale that was hatched in the mid-1800s, dressed up to look presentable, and dished out to a gullible public. And some good people swallowed it, hook, line and sinker. In fact, there are individuals who still believe it’s true.

It would be long decades before archaeologists began digging into the ruins of dead cities and unearthing their libraries. But when they did – and the buried documents were finally deciphered - what a fuss was stirred up! Contrary to scholarly claims, the very names, locations and customs described in the book of Genesis, were starting to surface!

How embarrassing for the “scholars”! The discoverers were well scolded for their pains.

Yes, the “Genesis myth” theory was found to be rooted in misconception. But oddly, you’ll still see it touted on the Internet by those who don’t know about these findings. Archaeologists continue to unearth evidences of biblical characters once thought to be mythical.

From my own expeditions – some 25 of them in the Middle East – I have to agree with the renowned archaeologist Nelson Glueck when he says,

It may be stated categorically that no archaeological discovery has ever controverted a biblical reference.

Glueck draws attention to

...the almost **incredibly accurate** historical memory of the Bible, and particularly so when it is **fortified by archaeological fact**. (Nelson Glueck, *Rivers in the Desert*, p.31)

It can now be stated with confidence that in every case where the physical science of archaeology has been able to test the Bible’s historical details, the “myth” charge has failed.

Yet, oddly enough, the critics’ out-dated anti-Genesis propaganda is still rehashed and served to us deceptively as “new information”. Thus:

“Written as late as 600 BC”?

IT IS CLAIMED: “Differences in style” mean Moses could not have written the “books of Moses”, e.g. Genesis, as Bible believers claim. It was done by some unknown Jewish scribes after their Babylon exile (606 to 536 BC).

IN REALITY: In Chapters 17 to 19 we shall demonstrate that the Genesis narratives were first written on tablets before Moses' time, then later compiled from these tablets by one man - Moses himself.

When this is understood, then any differences in style and phraseology are just what you would expect.

Different names of God mean different scribes?

IT IS CLAIMED: Because the Creator is called "God" (*Elohim*) in some places, and "Lord" (*Yahweh*) in other places, the book of Genesis must have been tossed together at some later date by several Jewish scribes who thus contradict one another.

IN REALITY: May one be pardoned for asking a dumb question? If these two names *Elohim* (shortened as *El*) and *Yahweh* (*Yah*) are a contradiction, then are we supposed to assume that the final editor was unaware he was "patching together" contradictions?

To be consistent, the critic might as well claim that Paul's Epistle to the Philippians in the New Testament was not written by Paul, but by two different apostles, because a certain person is there called "*Jesus*" in some places, and "*Christ*" in others. But then what about the places where he is called "*Jesus Christ*"?

As it turns out, critics are pleased to admit that the whole book of Philippians was Paul's work.

Very well, then. May we not apply the same rule to Genesis? If the two different names *Elohim* and *Yahweh* indicate two different authors, then tell me please, who wrote the five passages in Genesis where the Creator is called "Lord God" (*Yahweh Elohim*)?

The difficulty vanishes when we discover that the apparent contradiction is no contradiction at all. We simply have the **difference between a name and a title**. The word "God" is not a *name*; it is a *title*. *Yahweh* (meaning *the eternally self existing*) was the *name* of God.

The critic, resistant to factual discovery, ignores the reality that in the Ebla tablets from Syria, of 500 years before Abraham and 1,000 years before Moses, the use of ***Yah*** and ***El*** appear together on each tablet in harmony. (Source: Professor A. Gibson)

So learn to criticise the critics. Their attitude is wrong, always looking for supposed faults, often manufacturing them by pulling words out of context. They are empty pretenders to knowledge.

Evidence of just one writer

We shall discover in coming chapters that one man, Moses, compiled Genesis from ancient tablets in his possession. And it may interest you to know that in 1980 a computer ***analysis of the vocabulary*** of the first five books of the Bible was undertaken at the Hebrew University in Jerusalem. And guess what? The analysis showed that these five books **must have had the same writer.**

How embarrassing for the critics!

11 2000 to 1500 BC and no later

A FIND IN THE SYRIAN DESERT

OBJECTION: The book of Genesis is still just a selection of tales put together for religious purposes.

A youth and his girlfriend drove to a lake at 10pm on a Saturday night. The police arrived shortly thereafter. They questioned both and cited them for criminal trespassing.

A sign leading into the parking lot declared that “this lake is closed after dusk.”

The young man and his girlfriend were arraigned in court. In spite of her father being a lawyer, she plead guilty and paid a \$200 fine.

Having studied a step-by-step course put out by a legal firm known as Jurisdictionary, the boy’s father advised him to plead "not guilty" and to prepare for trial.

The youth brought *Webster's Collegiate Dictionary* to his trial.

He questioned the police officer. “Was I swimming, boating, or fishing?” The officer admitted he was not doing any of those things.

Then the youth showed the officer, prosecutor, and judge a picture of the sign that provided the so-called "notice" that gave rise to the charges against him.

Using his dictionary, he read the definition of "lake" and informed the court that there was no sign stating that the "parking lot" was closed after dusk.

The prosecutor said, “I accept your definition of ‘lake’ and the lack of legal notice.”

The judge slammed down her gavel and said, “Case dismissed.”

The sign was later changed by the county to make clear that it was the parking lot, and not the lake, that was closed after dusk.

Critical importance of words, names and customs

Yes, how critically vital can a single word become as evidence!

And certain peculiar words embedded in the Genesis text are evidence that Genesis is very, very old – in fact, at the very least a thousand years older than critics want us to know.

How did this discovery came about?

Archaeologists in the Middle East began excavating a number of ruined cities which dated to around 2000 BC. And as they continued digging, written tablets were unearthed. These intimately described life during the early biblical period. And it was discovered that the patriarchal **accounts in Genesis matched perfectly** this new evidence.

Well, what furore this stirred up! Those who were bold enough to report what they had seen were snubbed or told to keep quiet about it.

You see, these ancient tablets pinpointed the great antiquity of the Genesis account. And how did they do this? In five different ways:

1. Customs and laws unique to that period
2. Phrases and words peculiar to that period
3. Lost cities and new place names
4. Personal names
5. Vocabulary

1. Familiarity with the customs and laws unique to that period

(a) *THE MESOPOTAMIAN LAW CODE OF HAMMURABI*

You may have heard of the Code of Hammurabi. Well, a discovery made concerning this law was a stunner! When a careful reading of this ancient law was made, it revealed the existence of **social conditions** which, until this discovery, were not known outside the book of Genesis. And what time in history did these belong to? The period of 2000 to 1500 BC!

Within ten years of the discovery, the Oriental scholar Alfred Jeremias startled the world with the news that the background of the Genesis stories **agreed in every detail** with the civilization of that period as now discovered from the monuments. He admitted:

If Abraham lived at all it **could only have been** in surroundings and under conditions such as the Bible describes. (Jeremias, *The Old Testament in the Light of the Ancient East*. New York, 1911, vol.2, p.45)

(b) *THE NUZI TABLETS (from around 2000 BC)*: From the study of tablets unearthed in the ruins of Nuzi, in Iraq, G. Ernest Wright of Harvard University announced that Abraham's "life and times, as reflected in the stories about him, **fit perfectly** within the early second millennium, but imperfectly within any later period." (G. Ernest Wright, *Biblical Archaeology Rev. ed.* Philadelphia, 1962, p. 40)

WRITTEN "FOR RELIGIOUS PROPAGANDA"?

If you think that would embarrass the critics, you are right. But they were not to be upstaged. The next tasty treat they conjured up was this:

THE CLAIM: The book of Genesis is just a selection of tales put together for religious purposes. It is not history.

IN REALITY: Not genuine history? A nice try. But, unfortunately, more archaeological evidence was to surface, that would make that claim look cosmically silly.

Just to understand what was happening here, we might cite the Genesis story of Sarah's action with her maid Hagar. The book of Genesis tells us that when Sarah was unable to have a child by her husband Abraham, she offered to him her maid Hagar for the purpose, and Ishmael was born.

Well, it was now discovered that the procedure followed both by Abraham and Sarah was precisely that laid down in the law which then existed – as evidenced by laws 144-6 of the Code of Hammurabi.

Both the cuneiform records and the book of Genesis show for that period – and **that period alone** – that it was the **duty of a childless wife to provide her husband with a second wife to obtain offspring**. (T.J. Meek, *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 3rd ed., Princeton, N.J., 1969, p.220; compare with Gen.16:1-4)

By contrast, in Moses' time around 1400 BC, quite a different law was ordained in Deuteronomy. If the Genesis account of Abraham and Sarah was for Hebrew religious purposes, it would have made more sense for the story to follow and reinforce the Deuteronomy law.

What can the skeptics say to this, or can they face it at all?

It is no surprise, then, that in Genesis we notice other examples of personal familiarity with other customs and laws that were **UNIQUE to that very early period...** such as these:

- **The oral will of a father was unchangeable, even if a preceding will of another kind existed.** (C.H.Gordon, "Biblical Customs and the Nuzi Tablets", *The Biblical Archaeologist*, Vol. 30, 1940, p.8) Compare this with the unchangeable (though regretted) granting of the inheritance given to Jacob, recorded in Genesis 27:1-33.
- **An older brother could give up his inheritance by barter for other objects.** (*Ibid.*, p.5) Compare this with Esau's sale of his birthright for food, in Genesis 25:29-34.
- Genesis records that when Rachel ran away from her father's house, she took a teraphim (a doll) – which angered her father Laban so much that he chased after her and searched her tent for it. (Genesis chapter 31) And why so much fuss by a grown man over a doll? Archaeology has now discovered that **on the back of these dolls was inscribed the rights of inheritance**. Rachel, now

married to Jacob, had run away with her title deeds, her right to the inheritance! Possession of the doll meant a right by Jacob to a father-in-law's property.

The reason would be known not even to Moses. Such accuracy in reporting such a small matter surely demonstrates that the Genesis story was contemporary. To write this 1,000 or so years later is impossible, because inheritance laws change down the centuries and nobody living 1,000 years later could have got such details right.

- Again, the sale of a cave and field to Abraham (Genesis chapter 23) fits Hittite legal terms practised in 1900 BC.

FITS NO OTHER PERIOD

The narratives reveal such **familiarity with the circumstances and details of the events** recorded as to indicate that they were written by persons concerned with those events.

That is to say, the Genesis story is told in details so accurate ***as only a contemporary could describe them***. By the 6th century BC, the time that the critics want us to believe Genesis was written, knowledge of such details was lost. For this reason, it would be impossible for scribes of the 6th century BC to write in the flavour of the 2000 BC way of life.

Examination of the Code of Hammurabi, the Nuzi texts and others since discovered, reveals that the customs (the legal and social conditions) of the patriarchal period of Genesis ***fit into no other period*** of ancient history.

Hence, Professor W.F. Albright, the well-known archaeologist of Johns Hopkins University could say that they so

brilliantly illuminated many details in the patriarchal stories which **do not fit into the post-Mosaic** tradition at all

that we can no longer deny

the substantial historicity of the tradition of the Patriarchs.

He also declared that

as a whole the picture in Genesis is historical, and there is **no reason to doubt the general accuracy** of the biographical details and the sketches of personality which make the Patriarchs come alive with a vividness unknown to a single extra-biblical character in the whole vast literature of the ancient Near East. (Albright, *The Biblical Period From Abraham to Ezra*, Rev. ed. New York, 1963, p.5)

Archaeologist Horn was driven to the same conclusion:

Archaeological discoveries show us that the historical setting is true to fact and that the events described **did really happen**. (Siegfried H. Horn, *Records of the Past Illuminate the Bible*. Washington, D.C.: Review and Herald Publishing Association, 1975, p.62)

In the face of such discoveries, the critics were dumbfounded. The setting as given in the biblical descriptions agreed completely with the known facts. It showed that the biblical stories were trustworthy, after all.

2. Phrases and words peculiar to that period

(a) **THE MARI TABLETS (SYRIA)**: Further shocks emerged from the discovery of the Mari texts, written on over 20,000 clay tablets.

These tablets existed before the Babylonian king Hammurabi conquered and destroyed the city of Mari in 1759 BC, according to the average reckoning, or in 1695 BC by the later estimation.

Concerning mule-sacrifice descriptions, **the same three words for 'colt'** used in the biblical Jacob's blessing were found in the Mari text, even in the same order.

(b) **IGURAT TABLETS (SYRIA)**: Similarly, the biblical phrase **"the blood of grapes"** resembled an old Ugaritic expression 'tree-blood' which was used of wine. This showed that Jacob's blessing in the book of Genesis was of very old linguistic style.

3. Lost cities and new place names

Other information stamping the book of Genesis as contemporary to the events were names of that period embedded in the text. For example:

(a) **THE ORIGINAL NAME FOR JERUSALEM:** One of the Ebla tablets (before 2000 BC) has a statement about the city of SALEM. This is most interesting, since Genesis 14:18 tells us that SALEM was JERUSALEM'S ORIGINAL NAME. Never before in secular history had this been confirmed.

(b) **THE 5 CITIES OF THE PLAIN:** Another tablet (Tablet No. 1860) speaks of the same 5 cities mentioned in Genesis 14:2 - and in the identical order and with the same kings ruling as mentioned in Genesis. (For example, Genesis says that the king of Gomorrah was Birsha, exactly the same as shown on the Ebla tablet.)

In Genesis 10:19 we read: “and the border of the Canaanite was from Zidon as thou goest towards Gerar unto Gaza; **as thou goest towards Sodom and Gomorrah.**”

This sentence arrests attention, because it is written in *present tense*. It must have been written before the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah, which took place around 1893 BC. So completely were these cities blotted out that all trace of them became lost.

**COMPILED AFTER 1893 (TIME
OF SODOM'S DESTRUCTION),
BUT BEFORE 1406 BC
(HEBREWS INTO CANAAN)**

The evidence points to the compilation of Genesis as being done in the time of Moses. Many of the original place names given in Genesis were so old that the editor had to add an explanatory note to identify the locations. For example:

- “Bela (**which is** Zoar)” - Gen.14:2,8
- “Vale of Siddim (**which is** the salt sea)” - v.3
- “En-mishpat (**which is** Kadesh)” v.7
- “Hobah (**which is** on the left hand of Damascus” – v.15
- “Valley of Shaveh (**which is** the King's Dale)” – v.17

These ancient names are never again used in the Bible.
Here are some further instances:

- “*Beer-lahai-roi (behold it is between Kadesh and Bered)*” – Gen.16:14
- “*Sarah died in Kirjath-arba (the same is Hebron in the land of Canaan)*” – Gen.23:2

This last quote is of special interest. **Hebron** was where Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the founders of the Hebrew race, were buried. Surely, after the Israelite entry into Canaan (Palestine) around 1400 BC, every Israelite living in that land would know where it was.

Yet, at the time this was written, it was necessary to give not only its modern name, but even to say that Hebron was in the land of Canaan.

This surely indicates that the note in brackets was added at a very early date – and BEFORE the Israelites had entered Canaan, their future home.

In later times no one would need to be told where Hebron was. The Israelites must have known it quite well after its capture in Joshua’s day, when Hebron was given to his colleague Caleb for an inheritance. It then became one of the famous cities of refuge, familiar to all throughout the land. Besides all this, David was king of Hebron for 7 years.

On the other hand, it would be necessary for a people not yet entered into the land to be told, not only the name of the place where the founders of the race had lived, but where this place was situated.

The book of Genesis also uses primitive geographical expressions, such as “*the south country*” (Gen.20:1 and 24:62) and “*the east country*” (ch.25:6), in the time of Abraham.

After the time of Genesis these ancient designations never appear as a description of the countries adjoining the south and east of Palestine. After the time of Genesis they have well-known and well-defined names.

This suggests to us that “south” and “east country” were written down in early times. **No writer after Moses (c. 1400 BC) would have used such archaic expressions.**

The notes and explanations referred to above *fit in exactly with the circumstances of a people on the edge of the Promised Land*, for whom Moses was writing, *but who had not yet entered it*.

Those people were the Hebrews, who had escaped from their Egyptian slave masters in 1446 BC, but had not yet made their entrance into Canaan (which occurred in 1406 BC).

In a nutshell, Genesis contains references to towns which had either ceased to exist, or whose original names were now so ancient that the compiler of the book had to insert the new names along with the old, so that the Hebrews living in his day could identify the locations.

Archaeology supports that Moses did write Genesis to Deuteronomy, which was originally one book or scroll, until it was divided into five books by the Greek translators in 285 BC. The statement in Deuteronomy 31:24-26 that Moses finished writing the book refers to all his work from Genesis to Deuteronomy.

4. Personal names

National Geographic magazine, noting uncanny parallels between names on the Ebla tablets and those in Genesis, says:

Most intriguing of all are the personal names found on the Ebla tablets. They include AB-RA-MU (ABRAHAM), E-SA-UM (ESAU), and SA-U-LUM (SAUL). Present as well is a name never found before in ancient literature, save the Old Testament: DA-U-DUM (DAVID). Further, the name of a king, EBRIUM, who reigned about 2300 BC, bears a striking resemblance to EBER of the book of Genesis, who was the great-great-great-great grandfather of ABRAHAM the biblical progenitor of the Hebrews. (*National Geographic*, Page 736, December, 1978)

Time magazine, in discussing the discovery of these personal names, informs us that they provide

...the best evidence to date that some of the people described in the Old Testament **actually existed**. (*Time*, October 18, 1976, page 63)

Also mentioned in both the Bible and the Ebla tablets are cities whose names reflect their founders, who were ABRAHAM'S relatives:

- PHALIGA (Peleg) – Genesis 11:17-19
- TIL-TURAKHI (Terah) – Gen.11:27
- NAKHUR (Nahor) – Gen.11:27
- HARAN (Haran) – Gen.11:27

Furthermore, the Ebla tablets mention “Ur in the region of Haran”, which the book of Genesis names as the city ABRAHAM left from originally (Gen.11:31).

5. Vocabulary

Students of the Bible had long held that *Egypt-born Moses* wrote Genesis and the other “books of Moses” in the form that we have them today.

But then the critics had come along with the elegant and ingenious idea that some later (6th century BC) Jewish scribes born **in Babylon** were the writers. And no matter what the new evidence, **the outdated critics are still enslaved by that idea – and even still cited!**

That brings us to the vocabulary test. And very soon we find ourselves having to face another question:

Why is it that the “books of Moses” show NOT a Babylonian influence (which 6th century writers born in Babylon would show), but abound with *Egyptian* words, *Egyptian* roots and *Egyptian* phrases, as would be expected of a writer who had come out of Egypt?

The only definitely Babylonian words are to be found in the earlier chapters of Genesis, and not in the latter part – nor in the rest of the five books of Moses. We know that the Babel/Babylonian/Chaldean influence upon society prevailed in the early centuries, soon after the Tower of Babel.

It is **impossible** to suggest that Babylonian words found their way into these particular chapters **after** the Hebrews' second encounter with Babylon in the days of Daniel or Ezra (6th to 5th century BC). There is so much evidence that these accounts had been **written before then**.

When the narrative reaches the point where Joseph arrives in Egypt, the whole environment changes. We find **definite Egyptian names**, such as “Potiphar, the captain of the guard” (Gen.37:36) and “Zaphnathpaaneah and Asenath” (Gen.41:45) We find ourselves removed from the simple country life of the patriarchs in Palestine and thrown in among the customs of a Pharaoh and the constitution of a kingdom – **customs peculiar to ancient Egypt**. Customs such as these:

- The nature of royal honours and ceremonies
- The functions of a vizier
- Titles accorded to a vizier
- The prescribed ceremony for foreigners in making presents to an Egyptian vizier
- The particular method by which the land was granted to the Egyptian priests (ch.47:22)
- Joseph shaving himself before he could meet Pharaoh (Gen.41:14)
- Joseph’s golden neck chain (ch.41:42)
- That runners who go before his chariot demand homage to him as the highest official of the court (ch.41:42)
- How the bodies of Jacob and Joseph were embalmed (ch.50:2-3,26)
- Of the 40 days that this process occupied (ch.50:3)
- When Joseph’s brothers come down to Egypt he does not eat with them, “because the Egyptians might not eat bread with Hebrews, for that is an abomination to the Egyptians.” (ch.43:32) This is a statement that would never have been written at a time later than Moses.

These last 14 chapters of Genesis also contain many purely Egyptian words and phrases. The person who wrote these chapters was **intimately acquainted with Egyptian life and thought**.

WRITTEN “TO GLORIFY ANCESTORS”?

IT IS CLAIMED: Genesis was just made up by later priests and scribes who sought thereby **to eulogize** the deeds of **their ancestors**.

IN REALITY: Well, the critics deserve a Nobel Prize for trying hard.

You remember Hannibal, that illustrious Carthaginian general of about 200 BC? In one of the perilous campaigns he lost an eye. In later life, two artists were commissioned to paint his portrait. And so anxious were they to hide this physical defect of their hero that neither painted a true likeness. One painted him full-faced but gave him two good eyes, while the other produced a profile, carefully selecting the side that had the good eye! While the intention was kind, the finished result was a deception.

A very human action, if you ask me. It is quite normal for writers to insert stories to bolster the reputations of their heroes, while playing down their faults. But an astonishing fact is that Genesis does not do this.

Unfortunately for the critics' imaginative claim, Genesis shows no evidence of eulogizing its characters. In all honesty, it exposes the weaknesses as well as the strengths of the patriarchs. It recounts their sins, as well as their virtues. It tells both sides of the story. It does not try to cover up any blemishes in its real live history. It opens them up to full view. Don't you think that's honest history?

And so you read of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob lying and deceiving. Yes, Genesis presents the treachery, pride and cowardice of the founders of the 12 tribes of Israel – a humiliating record, something that the Jews would never naturally want to chronicle in this way. The records **have not been idealised**, as the critics like to assert, but left in their ancient and truthful reality.

One of the greatest archaeologists of all time is Professor W.F. Albright. He states concerning Genesis and its four related books of Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy (and this is still valid), that

...new discoveries **continue to confirm the historical accuracy or the literary antiquity** of detail after detail in it... It is, accordingly, sheer hypercriticism to deny the substantially Mosaic character of the Pentateuchal tradition. (C.H. Dodd, *More New Testament Studies*. Manchester: University Press, 1968, p. 224)

Archaeology has clothed in measurable fact many a "legend" that long had passed for fable.

Crucial question: which is older?

Yet, with a considerable show of learning, critics still follow one another like sheep, glibly regurgitating old theories of the last century and earlier, which they have not allowed to be corrected by factual discoveries. Those who claim to be modern critics are often the most resistant to modern discoveries.

They talk about cover-ups of the truth. The only cover-up seems to be by these critics. Kenneth Kitchen, Professor of Egyptology in the School of Archaeology and Oriental studies, University of Liverpool, hits it on the head. He laments that “scientific and archaeological research is not getting through to young people in schools and colleges – particularly all the evidence supporting the reliability of the Bible.

“In some circles there even seems to be *a deliberate withholding* of such information, yet it is the fruit of leading scholars... known for their restrained, moderate, factual presentation of their researches.” (Forward to Victor Pearce’s book *Evidence For Truth: Archaeology*, 2nd edition)

Ignoring this research, the critics persist in trying to make us believe that Genesis is a patchwork of myths tossed together as late as the 6th century BC. You’ve got to laugh, really.

While the earlier critics concocted some of the most stupid tales by which to discredit Genesis, their modern equivalents are doing their best to match them.

In this chapter we have discovered that *tablets dated to around 2000 BC parallel those in early Genesis*. It requires no special sagacity, therefore, to recognise that the Genesis stories were not copied around 700 to 500 BC from Babylonian legends.

Rather, Genesis originated in a period at least as early as 2000 BC. It *includes archaisms* which indicate it was written **at least as early as** the Babylonian and Assyrian versions of Creation and the Flood. Is it necessary to say more?

Anyway, let’s move on. Do I now have an amazing piece of ancient writing to share with you! It has been called the Table of Nations. Shall we take a peek?...

12 The Table of Nations

IS GENESIS IGNORANT OF WORLD GEOGRAPHY?

OBJECTION: Since Genesis claims to list all the nations of the earth, then why does it omit the Americas, eastern Asia and the Pacific? The writer was mistaken in thinking that the Mediterranean-Middle East region was the whole world. What ignorance!

Sunburnt and unshaven, explorer Knemhotep returned to Egypt with a wild report of a “vast continent” where animals carried their young in pouches and the natives threw a weapon that came back to the hand. Can you guess where he’d been?

More recently, in the remote Brazilian province of Amazonas, the French engineer Apollinaire Frot came upon an ancient carved rock hidden by dense jungle close to a river. The inscription recorded the journey of an early Egyptian priest to a land that is now known as Bolivia. It gave directions to silver and gold mines. Stage by stage, such markers ran across central Brazil.

Even some Greek navigators were in on the secret. They spoke of islands in the “western sea” (that is, the Atlantic) with a great mainland beyond (America). And of regions where “for 30 days on end the sun sets for little more than an hour, and for several months the night is faintly illuminated by the western twilight” (the Polar regions). And of “countries where there was a day for 6 months and night for 6 months.”

Yes, there can be no doubt that the whole world was explored and known in ancient times. Mariners sailed the seven seas, returning home with riches, treasures and wondrous reports from far away lands.

We even today possess some 14 ancient maps based upon even earlier world maps thousands of years old, which show Antarctica, the coasts of the Americas, and so on. Many of these are on a spherical grid and indicate an ancient knowledge of cartography comparable to our own, in which longitude and latitude were understood.

However, before man spread out to settle in the extremities of the planet, before trading voyages to the ends of the earth became common, the world population was, for a time, concentrated into just a very small area.

Strange names

And that brings us to the ancient Table of Nations. And what is that? It's a list in the book of Genesis of what are claimed to be the nations of the world. As it says, "*By these were the isles of the nations divided in their lands; every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations.*" (Genesis 10:5)

And then it proceeds to list the nations of Planet Earth. And it goes on to say: "*Seba, and Havilah, and Sabta, and Raamah, and Sabtecha.... Almodad, and Sheleph, and Hazarmaveth, and Jerah, and Hadoram, and Uzal, and Diklah, and Obal,*" and so on.

"Oh, come off it!" exclaims the critic. "Those nations never existed. Nowhere does history record them. Strange names. Mythical names. For pity's sake, give me just one name that I can recognise, will you?"

Do you think the skeptic might have a case, here? Could this be a fictitious list, after all?

Perhaps this is a good moment, if you are a little drowsy, to stand up and inhale three long, slow breaths of air... stretch your arms... and then get yourself comfortable again. I want you to be fresh and alert for this.

...Well, did that feel good?

Now back to those strange names in Genesis. Here are some of them again:

“Seba, and Havilah, and Sabta, and Raamah, and Sabtechah.... Almodad, and Sheleph, and Hazarmaveth, and Jerah, and Hadoram, and Uzal, and Diklah, and Obal,” and so on. (Genesis chapter 10)

And so the critic rolls his eyes, utters a snort and says smirkingly, “Utter fiction!” And everyone goes silent.

OBJECTION: Limited view of the world:

This Table in Genesis shows that Noah’s descendants occupied ONLY the Mediterranean-Middle East region. The biblical writer mistakenly thought that the area from Europe to Ethiopia to Iran was the whole world. He doesn’t mention the Maori, the Maya, the Chinese, and so on. Therefore the book of Genesis is in gross error.

And the **Great Flood was not worldwide:**

If this Table in Genesis lists all nations descended from the Flood survivors as occupying this small area, then the rest of the world outside this area must have comprised OTHER nations that were not touched by the Flood. So the Flood was NOT worldwide, and therefore Genesis is again wrong.

IN REALITY: Well, that seems a pretty convincing argument. It looks quite bad for the Table of Nations and its claims, right?

Oh, may I put up my hand? Admittedly, this may be a dumb question, but if these are fictitious names, with no reality in history, then please tell me, why on earth does one of archaeology’s leading authorities, Professor W. F. Albright, call this Genesis 10 list “**an astonishingly accurate document**”? (W. F. Albright, *Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands*. New York: Funk & Wagnalls Co., 1955, p.4)

Astonishingly accurate? IS IT POSSIBLE WE ARE OVERLOOKING SOMETHING?

Very well, then. Let's play detective... starting with the Genesis claim. There can be no doubt that the Genesis writer really believed he was listing ALL nations of the world.

1. GENESIS: "ALL NATIONS OF THE WORLD ARE LISTED HERE"

Yes, even before we get to the Table of Nations, we find the book of Genesis making a sweeping statement. It says that ***"the whole earth [was] overspread"*** from the three sons of Noah. (Genesis 9:19) And then the Table itself concludes with this statement: ***"These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood."*** (ch.10:32)

So the writer wants us to accept that ***all the nations*** of earth are descended from the single family of Noah! It is telling us that ***there are no nations that did not descend from Noah.***

In other words, every nation on earth today is descended from the nations listed here in Genesis chapter 10. And that includes the Chinese, the Maya, the Maori, the Australian aborigine, and so on.

2. ARCHAEOLOGY: "THESE ARE REAL TRIBAL NAMES FROM LONG AGO"

Archaeologists have been very busy in recent years filling in numerous missing gaps in our knowledge of ancient tribes. And we are coming face to face with tribal names from away back in the distant past that are virtually identical to the names listed in Genesis 10.

Careful research does indeed show that this is an authentic list of the very earliest nations on our planet. Not only that. It turns out to be ***by far the most complete listing*** of ancient tribes and nations that we possess.

It is only through modern discoveries that we can now know that these names ***did at one time truly exist*** – and we discover that they were recorded in this Table of Nations with astonishing accuracy.

3. THESE NAMES WERE FORGOTTEN LONG BEFORE THE 6TH CENTURY BC

The critics must now face the fact that many of those unique names are of obscure tribes that had **disappeared from the historical scene** many, many, many centuries **before the 6th century BC** (the time in which the critic claims Genesis was composed).

Yes, by the 6th century BC these names were well and truly forgotten. Vanished. Unknown. Which means that the book of Genesis containing these names could not have been written as late as the 6th century BC, as the critics claim. No chance, at all! Sorry, critics.

The Table of Nations could have been written **only while these tribes were still known**. Does that make sense to you? And it means that this Genesis document is about as old as you can get.

4. THIS GENESIS 10 LIST IS AN “INSTANT” SNAP-SHOT IN TIME

Now here's the key to understanding the whole puzzling list. And you may find it quite exciting when the reality sinks in. This Table of Nations is actually a *“camera” snap-shot in time* – an instant picture of the nations as they were *at a particular moment in history* – at the time when the Table was written.



How far the organized nations had spread when Genesis 10 was written

So when was this Table of Nations composed? And all these tribes listed, when were they in existence?

We shall now prove that this Genesis chapter 10 document bears within itself the ID of a document written *about 2000 BC*. It is describing those tribes in existence soon after the Tower of Babel incident, which occurred around 2244 BC. It also identifies the regions in which they initially settled, and the nations which had by that time developed from those first tribal settlements.

100% accurate

There were occasions in the past when the book of Genesis seemed most certainly to be in error. But, as a hands-on field archaeologist, I can tell you today that wherever its statements can be sufficiently tested, Genesis is found to be **completely accurate**.

Its Table of Nations provides insights into the relationships between peoples that are *only now* becoming obtainable by other independent means.

We shall now explore *some specific features that testify to its great age*. The evidence will be seen to be both emphatic and convincing.

1. The small development of the Japheth races

Those conversant with ancient history will tell you that the **Indo-Europeans** (descendants of Noah's son **Japheth**) were great colonisers and explorers, spreading from north-western Europe to the Indus Valley at quite an early date.

But this Genesis Table views them as **occupying only Asia Minor (Turkey) and along the immediate Mediterranean coast**.

Yet, shift the TIME SETTING to just a few centuries **later than 2000 BC** and such omissions **would be inconceivable**.

The compiler of the Table was cataloguing these same tribes as they

existed in his day, BEFORE they spread out very far. In the Table we observe the extent of Indo-European settlement as it was at a time close to 2000 BC.

2. Sidon mentioned, but not Tyre

You've heard of the ancient city of Tyre? Tyre was the London of the ancient world. From secular history we know that from the 13th century BC onward, **Tyre was a major city-state** on the eastern Mediterranean coast, which made a considerable noise in the world, whereas nearby Sidon did not.

But **Tyre is not even mentioned** in the Genesis list, when it names cities along the eastern Mediterranean coast, "*from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza.*" (Gen.10:19) This omission of Tyre in the Table is truly amazing. It clearly implies that **Tyre had NOT YET risen to importance – if she existed at all.**



Tyre is unknown to the writer

Do you see? It is evident that **this Table was written** prior to the important Hebrew-Tyre exploits of 1000 BC – and even **prior to the 13th century BC.**

3. Sodom and Gomorrah said to be still existing

In verse 19, the boundaries of the land of Canaan (future Palestine) are delineated:

“And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha.”

Since four of these named cities, Sodom and Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboim, were quite dramatically **destroyed around 1893 BC**, it is inconceivable that a later writer would mention them and not make some attempt at informing the reader as to what had happened to them subsequently.

It is more reasonable to accept that he was **writing prior to their complete disappearance**.

Had this Table of Nations been composed by Moses (who wrote between 1486 and 1406 BC), he would **not** have said, “*as thou goest, unto **Sodom**, and **Gomorrah** and **Admah**, and **Zeboim***”. Rather, he would have worded it this way: “*as you go unto the sea of the plain, even the salt sea,*” like he does in Deuteronomy 3:17.

Why? Because by Moses’ day those cities no longer existed – but instead the Salt Sea (Dead Sea) was now in that very same region.

This dates the Table of Nations at least **prior to 1893 BC**.

4. Jerusalem not mentioned

This Table concerns itself with the names of people, cities they founded, tribes they gave rise to, and territories they settled in.

Yet, while the Jebusites are mentioned (in Gen.10:16), their capital city (later to be named Jerusalem) is totally omitted.

This is **analogous to an early Briton** listing the settlements of importance and **leaving out London**.

The inference is that **the writer never knew about Jerusalem**. He lived at a time BEFORE it gained relevance to his readers.

5. The great amount of space given to the Joktanites

Now read verses 26 to 30 of the Table of Nations:

“And Joktan begat Almodad, and Sheleph, and Hazarmaveth, and Jerah, and Hadoram, and Uzal, and Diklah, and Obal, and Abimael, and Sheba, and Ophir, and Havilah, and Jobab: all these were the sons of Joktan. And their dwelling was from Mesha, as thou goest unto Sephar a mount of the east.”

Why is this significant?

Here’s why. If you were to pick up an earlier history book on the settlement of North America by the white man and his inter-action with Indian tribes, you would meet with tribal names like Seneca, Cree, Ojibway, Mohawk, Cherokee and Huron.

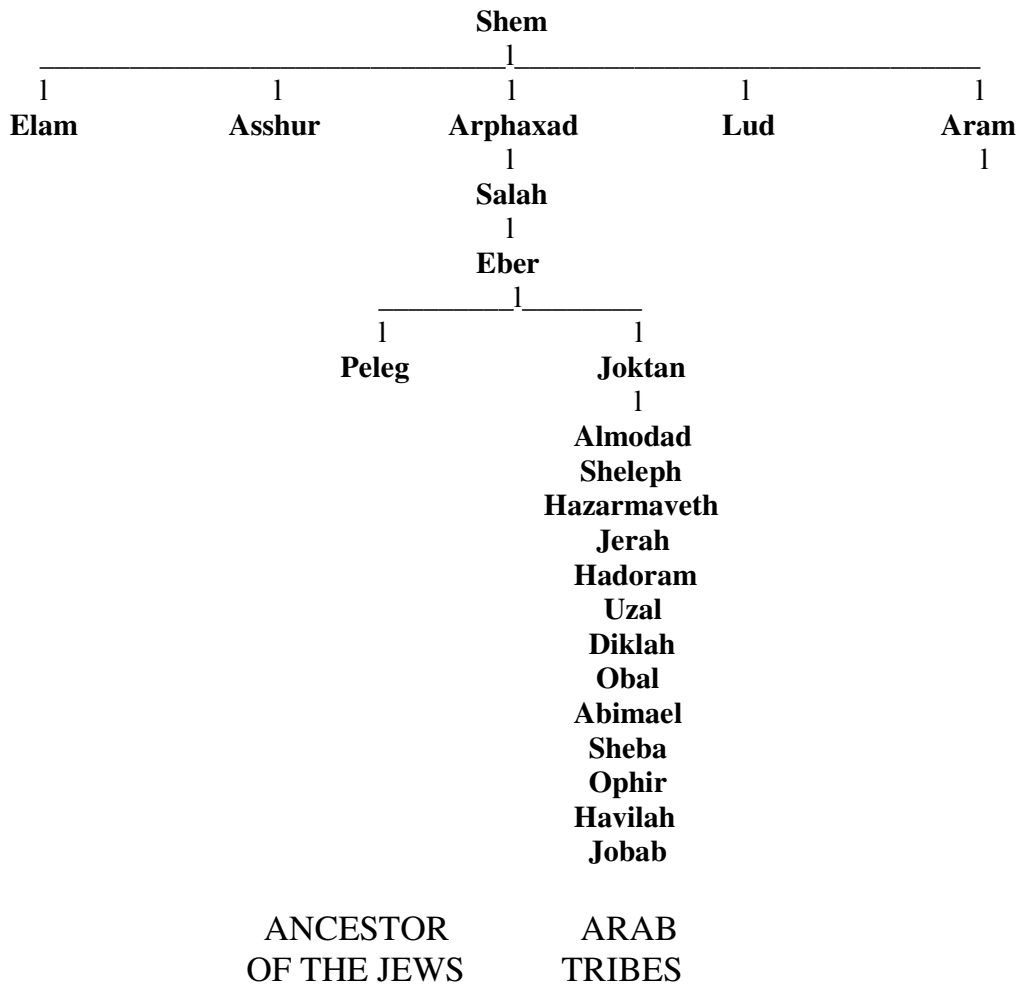
But today only a few of these would have any meaning.

Evidently, to occupy fully one eighth of all the verses in the list of nations, the **Joktanites of Arabia** were both **numerous and important** when the Table was written.

But within a few centuries they were either insignificant or unknown.

So if a Jewish writer of the **6th century BC** had strung off this list of names (even if that were possible), **they would mean little** to his readers. So he just would **not** have included them.

Now compare this long list of Arab tribes in the Table with the sparse information concerning the line of Shem to Peleg (the ancestors of the Jews). Compare the two lines descending from Eber:



When you compare this long list of Arab tribes in the Table with the sparse information concerning the line of Shem to Peleg (the ancestors of the Jews), it is **difficult to argue convincingly that the Table was a piece of Jewish propaganda** favoring their own ancestry.

It bears the imprint of a document written at a time when these **now-forgotten Arabian tribes** were still important to its readers.

6. Two recent events mentioned

In this Table of Nations only two events are mentioned, both of which occurred *in the final generation* to be listed in each ancestral line:

In the ancestral line of Ham: “...*Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth.*” (v.9)

In the ancestral line of Shem: “...*Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided.*”(v.25)

This coincidence suggests that these two events were still fresh in the mind of the writer and that they were recent history at the time the Table of Nations was composed, and that these two events in particular were of interest to his contemporaries.

7. The ending of the Hebrew line at Peleg

Since Abraham (born 1992 BC) was so important a figure as the father of all Jewish people, it is unthinkable that a later Jewish author who was recording the ancestry of the Jews, would have neglected to indicate where Abraham originated.

But Abraham is not anywhere in the picture. The Table lists off the **ancestry of the Hebrew race** only from Shem to Peleg – just 5 generations. And **then it stops dead!**

“*Shem... Arphaxad... Salah... Eber... Peleg.*” (vv.21,24-25) Sudden end of list.

Why does the list end here?

We’ve found Sodom and Gomorrah mentioned in the Table, yet **Abraham**, who was a figure of some importance **before** the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, is omitted. So we can only conclude that **the writer of the Table of Nations did not know of Abraham’s existence.**

And this can mean only one of two things. Either Abraham was not yet alive when Genesis 10 was written, or he had not yet achieved prominence.

The Table of Nations was written *as early as that!*

Peleg was born in 2244 BC. A section of the Genesis record written later

than the Table of Nations picks up the subsequent history and informs us that “Peleg lived thirty years, and begat Reu.” (Genesis 11:18)

2244 minus 30 equals 2214.

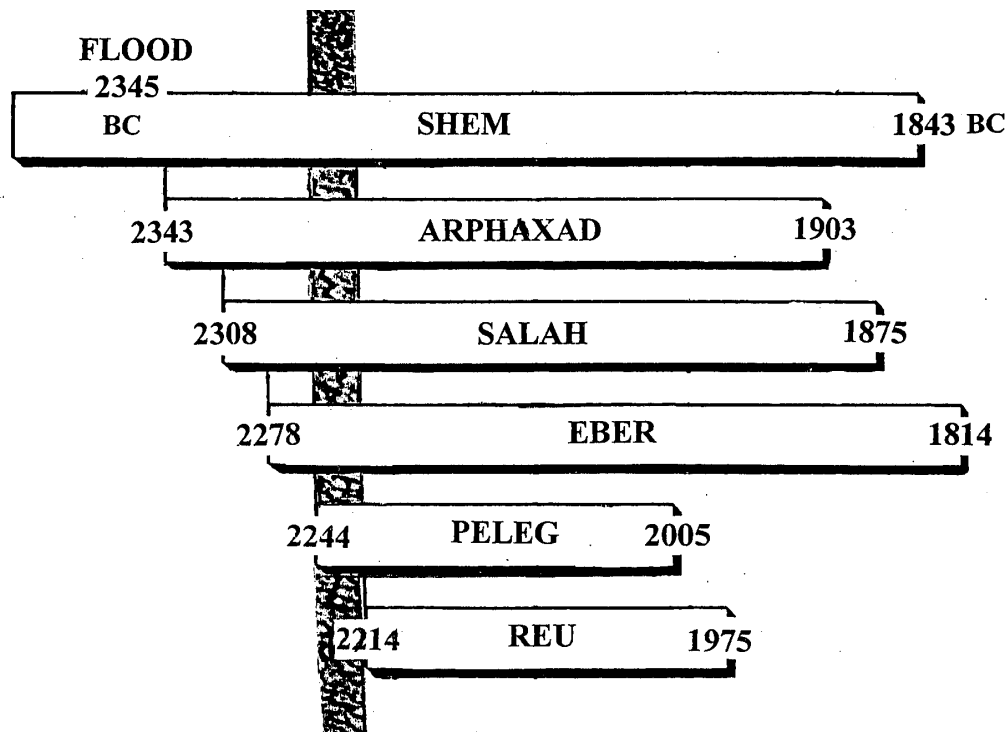
Since the **Table of Nations** ends *before* the birth of Reu, this places its composition as **prior to 2214 BC**.

Well, these are just a few of many intriguing evidences that the Table of Nations is **much, much older than critics have been willing to admit**.

It appears that the writer of the Table composed it no later than 2214 BC.

And I believe we can be even more precise. It appears to be almost beyond reasonable doubt that the Table of Nations was recorded in the 30-year window of time between the birth of Peleg (2244 BC) and the birth of his son Reu (2214 BC).

In the following chart, the shaded area marks that 30-year period during which I suggest to you the Genesis 10 Table of Nations was written – *after* the birth of Peleg in 2244 BC, but *before* the birth of Reu in 2214 BC.



The name of the writer

But that is not all that we can discover. Some further detective work will reveal to us the very name of the person who wrote this Table of Nations! We shall reserve that for Chapter 18.

While the Bible is not primarily a history book, modern scholarship has found that when it does touch on history the Bible is remarkably accurate. Increasingly, its stories are seen by leading researchers as solid history, set in backgrounds as real as our own today.

The greatest of Middle East archaeologists, Professor William Albright of John Hopkins University, avers that the Table of Nations in Genesis 10:

...stands absolutely alone in ancient literature without a remote parallel...an **astonishingly accurate document**. [and] shows such remarkably “modern” understanding of the ethnic and linguistic situation in the modern world, in spite of all its complexity, that scholars never fail to be impressed with the author’s knowledge of the subject. (William F. Albright, *Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands*. New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1955, pp.70ff)

In fact, he begins his classic essay, *The Biblical Period*, by saying:

Hebrew national tradition **excels all others in its clear picture of tribal and family origins**. In Egypt and Babylonia, in Assyria and Phoenicia, in Greece and Rome, we look in vain for anything comparable. There is nothing like it in the tradition of the Germanic peoples. Neither India nor China can produce anything similar.

Something else. This detailed Table of Nations could have been composed only if a sustained high degree of communication existed among all these peoples. This implies an early knowledge of geography.

So ignore those skeptics who pretend it’s only folklore. Are we missing something in our school history classes?

13 All of us from the skipper's three sons?

DO YOU HAVE ROYAL BLOOD?

Somewhere in the world is a small piece of paper poorly printed and coloured. It is a one cent postage stamp dated 1856 which belonged to the American philatelist, Arthur Hind.

It was printed in British Guiana on magenta sugar paper, because the normal stamps supplied from England were delayed.

So poor was the printing, that the Guiana postmaster initialled each stamp to prevent forgery.

In October, 1935, Arthur Hind's widow offered the stamp for sale by auction to a gathering of philatelists in London. The bids rose from 3,500 to 7,500 pounds (today say, \$52,000 to \$112,000), but failed to reach the reserve Mrs Hind had placed on it.

Unsold, it was returned to America, where it was lodged with a bank for safekeeping and insured for 10,000 pounds (in today's value \$150,000) with Lloyds of London.

One small square of paper worth \$150,000? Incredible, but true.

What do you think is the value of five ancient, independently preserved royal family trees, each of which individually traces its origins, generation by generation, all the way back to Noah himself? These are genealogies which survive from pagan, pre-Christian Iceland, Denmark, Ireland, Norway and Britain. We shall speak of these very soon.

Meanwhile, according to the book of Genesis, those who emerged from the survival vessel at the end of the Great Flood were eight in number -

Noah and his wife, and their three sons **Japheth**, **Shem** and **Ham**, with their wives.

Interestingly, in places as wide apart as **India**, **Greece** and **China**, recorders preserved the names of their ancestors who survived the Flood –and, do you know, these include names virtually identical to those in the Genesis account: Noah’s three sons Ham, Shem and Japheth.

The world officially divided by lot

According to many traditions of the ancient world, sometime after the great World Flood, the earth was divided by lot among the three sons of Noah, the leader of the world survivors. Eusebius tells us that this solemn division took place about 20 years before Noah’s death. (George Stanley Faber, *Origin of Pagan Idolatry*. London: F. and C. Rivingtons, 1816, Vol. 3, pp. 467,468)

Each of the three groups had its own portion assigned to it for the future. Japheth and his descendants were to occupy initially Europe and northern Asia; Shem southern Asia intermingled with Ham’s offspring, while Ham was to settle Africa and southern Asia.

Moses refers to this event in his writings. He says, “*When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people...*” (Deuteronomy 32:8)

Among the nations, the remembrance of this triple division remained. Out of it, a certain territory, well-known to all the rest of mankind, was reserved as the lot of the future race through whom the promised world Deliverer would later come.

INDIA: There is an Indian account of the Great Flood. It says Noah (called Satyaurata) had three sons – **Iyapeti** (Japheth?), **Sharma** (Shem?) and **C’harma** (Ham?). To Iyapeti he **allotted the regions** north of the Himalayas and to Sharma the country of the south.

The father cursed C’harma, who had laughed at him when he was accidentally inebriated with strong liquor made from fermented rice. (*Institutes of Menu*, 1280 BC; J.H. Titcomb, “Ethnic Testimonies to the Pentateuch”, *Trans. Victorian Institute*, 6, 1872:249-253) How strikingly close to the Genesis account of the cursing of Ham!

GREECE: Homer, in his *Iliad*, shows us that the Greeks likewise recollected three brothers. To each was **given a domain** when the world was **divided**. The Greeks trace themselves back to **Japetos**. (Aristophanes, *The Clouds*. Roger's Trans., line 998); John Skinner, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on Genesis*. Edinburgh: T. and T. Clark, 1930, p.196)
The Hindu **Iyapeti** and the Greek **Japetos** are recognisable as the biblical **Japheth**, son of Noah.

CHINA: The Chinese ancestor **Nu-Wah** (Noah) survived the destruction of the world by a flood and accomplished the reconstruction. There followed legendary heroes sometimes referred to as the Three Sovereigns (Noah's three sons?). After these came the Three Dynasties, Hsia, Shang and Chou (held by scholars to initiate the historical period).

The Miautso people of China (who first settled in what is now Kiangsi province, until driven out by the Chinese) are another early people who regard themselves as being descended from Noah's son **Japheth**. They also remember some of the other early patriarchs whose names appear in the biblical record.

When first contacted by the outside world, they were in possession of surprisingly accurate recollections of the Creation and the Great Flood. And some of the minute detail of their early world history matches almost hand in glove with the Genesis record.

The accuracy of their oral history owes its purity to the fact that it has been recited in full at weddings, funerals and other public occasions, since the earliest times.

Their names for Shem, Ham and Japheth, Noah's three sons, are **Lo Shen, Lo Han** and **Jah-phu**. (Transl. by Edgar Truax of the oral traditions of the Miautso. Bill Cooper, *After the Flood*. Chichester, UK.: New Wine Press, 1995, pp.243-246)

Thus, in regions as distant from each other as Greece, India and China, the names of Noah's three sons have been preserved, in agreement with the book of Genesis. This points to an historical common origin.

ARMENIA: Until early in the 20th century, when driven out by the Turks, the Armenians dwelt in the Ararat area of eastern Turkey. The Armenians trace their ancestry to Hiak, the "Son of **Targom** [**Togarmah**], a grandson of **Noah**" (Moses Chorenensis, 1.4, sec.9-11) who is also named in Genesis 10:2,3. They claimed to have inhabited the Ararat region, **the landing place of Noah's survival vessel**, since that time.

AFRICA: It is possible that all of Africa, despite the different shades of colour of its native populations, was initially settled by various members of the one Hamitic family. We find the Yoruba, who are black-skinned, claiming to be descendants of *Nimrod*, grandson of *Noah*. (K.C. Murray, "Nigerian Bronzes: Work from Ife," *Antiquity*, England, March, 1941, p. 76; compare Genesis 10:8)

The Libyans, who are white-skinned, are usually traced back to *Lehabim*, a son of *Mizraim*, son of *Ham*, son of *Noah*. (Compare with Genesis 10:13)

The Egyptians also were direct descendants of *Mizraim*. And the Arabs still call Egypt *Mizr*.

The Hottentots likewise speak of Noah, remembering him as *Noh* and *Hiagnoh*. The natives of the Sudan called him *Nuh*.

SOUTH AMERICA: In the Amazon region he was known as *Noa*.

PACIFIC OCEAN: In Hawaii he was remembered as *Nu-u*.

EUROPE: Certain people who migrated into Europe also kept an accurate record of their beginnings. They wrote down the names of their founding fathers and continually brought their genealogies up to date with each new generation. And these preserved lists, annals and chronicles give us a surprising link between the early post-Flood era and more modern times.

During more than 25 years, British researcher Bill Cooper amassed copious evidence that the earliest Europeans recorded their descent from Noah through his son Japheth. They did this in meticulously kept records. He investigated in detail these various records and was able to establish their antiquity and authenticity. (Bill Cooper, *After the Flood*. Chichester: New Wine Press, 1995)

While the Genesis Table of Nations originated in the Middle East, on the other hand these independent records originated in Europe. It is significant that they pre-date the arrival of Christianity in Europe, which nullifies the argument that they may have been medieval forgeries.

These records contain the early post-Flood history of Europe. They bear unsuspected and striking marks of authenticity – and contain certain material that can be dated to at least the 12th century BC – with important details that no later forger would have been aware of.

We have, for example, the genealogies and king lists of ancient Britain. These commence before the migration into Europe. The ancestors of the early British kings were counted generation by generation, back all the way to **Japheth**, the son of Noah.

Cooper researched the lists of six separate Anglo-Saxon royal families whose kingdoms were hundreds of miles apart, who spoke different dialects and whose people rarely wandered beyond their own borders unless it was to fight. He discovered that each had a list of ancestral names that just happens to coincide in its earlier portions with that of every other.

And each goes back to Japheth, the ancestor of the Indo European races. For example, “This **Sceaf** [Japheth] was Noah’s son, and he was born in the Ark.” (*Reliq. Antiq.*, p.173)

These pre-migration ancestral lists of the Anglo-Saxon kings would be astonishing records even if they were the only ones that existed. But, in addition, separate genealogies were kept by the pre-Christian Danes, Norwegians and Icelanders. And the genealogies of these diverse nations, in their earlier portions, though strictly individual, are practically identical.

Agreement on the dispersion after 5 generations

Now, here’s the interesting part. When we compare the genealogies of these diverse nations, the early Irish, the Anglo-Saxons, Norwegians, Danes and Icelanders, we discover that up to the FIFTH generation they share the same ancestral names.

That is, the genealogies show a unity as a single people, up to the FIFTH generation. But from generation FIVE the pedigrees diverge. And this is remarkable!

Why? Because that is precisely the history that we find in Genesis – that the people were one, until the Babel event. From that moment in time – the FIFTH generation after the Flood - the pedigrees branched away from each other in an emphatic way.

So we find that the varied genealogies of these different nations are exactly in accordance with the historical movement of nations as depicted in Genesis.

Two different branches recorded independently – from Japheth

Something else of interest. Early in the Table of Nations we read:

*The sons of Japheth; Gomer, and **Magog**, and Madai, and **Javan**, and Tubal, and Meshech, and Tiras. (Genesis 10:2)*

Quite independently, we find the genealogy of the Irish Celtic kings tracing back to Japheth's son **Magog**.

This descent through **Magog** in the early Irish chronicles is in direct contrast to the claims of the Saxons and other European nations, whose genealogies were traced back to **Javan**, another son of Japheth.

Modern archaeology has confirmed that the early Irish, the early British and some other Europeans were Celts.

But the Saxons were not Celts. These two groups were each from a different line – confirming what their genealogies show.

Quite independently of each other, the pagan Celts and the pagan Saxons both **confirm** the Genesis record of history.

Accurate records kept

You may wonder, were these ancient races really serious enough to keep accurate records over long periods of time? Let the scholar Cusack answer:

The Books of Genealogies and Pedigrees form a most important element in Irish pagan history. For social and political reasons, the Irish Celt preserved his genealogical tree with scrupulous precision. The rights of property and the governing power were transmitted with patriarchal

exactitude on strict claims of primogeniture, which claims could only be refused under certain conditions defined by law... and in obedience to an ancient law, established long before the introduction of Christianity, all the provincial records, as well as those of the various chieftains, were required to be furnished every third year to the convocation at Tara, where they were compared and corrected. (M. F. Cusack, *The Illustrated History of Ireland*. 1868. Published in facsimile by Bracken Books, London, 1987)

It is impossible to see how anyone could have contrived even a minor alteration to their pedigree without every one else becoming immediately aware of the fact.

These records may be relied upon, therefore, to be as accurate as any record can be.

Worldwide agreement with Genesis

The skeptic is faced with this astonishing dilemma: that so many peoples from diverse cultures actually recorded their descent from the patriarchs of the biblical book of Genesis long before they could have heard of the Bible or have been taught its contents!

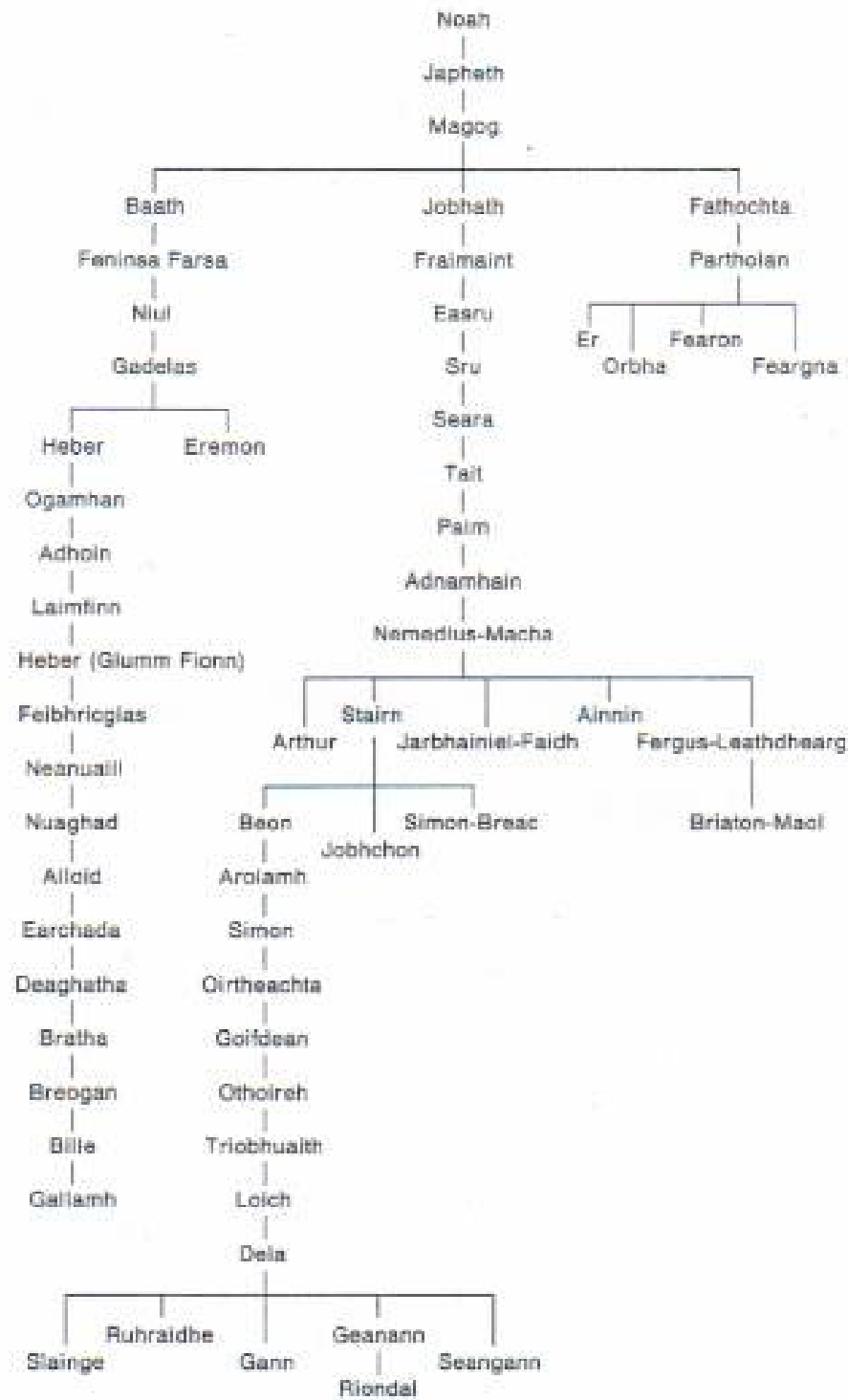
Here is a question for the skeptic who asserts that the biblical characters are fictitious. What knowledge could pagan Saxons (and all the other races) have had of supposedly non-existent biblical characters?

Thus, in regions as far distant from each other as Greece, India, China, Britain, Ireland, Denmark, Norway and Iceland, the name of Japheth the son of Noah has been preserved, in agreement with the Hebrew book of Genesis.

This speaks loudly of an historical common point of origin after the Great Flood.

On the basis of the *number of generations listed* in the preserved genealogies, each genealogy would go back 4,000 to 5,000 years – which is the very time frame for the Great Flood.

EARLY IRISH GENEALOGY



(Bill Cooper)

All of these sources differ from one another in many and various points – which rules out inter-dependency or copying. But they also agree on many independent points – which demonstrates the historicity of the Genesis patriarchs who are listed.

To discover these biblical patriarchs listed amongst such diverse and independent sources – what should this tell us?

The historicity of many other characters from the ancient world is accepted on much less evidence than this – often merely upon the single appearance of a name.

It has been fashionable to fall for the evolution lie that you cannot take the Genesis account of our origins literally. However, these discoveries lay bare the great distortion. The truth is just now being glimpsed by a handful of specialists – it is still almost completely unsuspected by the average civilized citizen.

And what precious information this is!

All nations included

Pulling back the curtain to see the bigger picture, the indications are that the descendants of **Japheth** divided into two major bodies. One of these comprised the ancestors of the Indians and Persians, whereas from the second there issued eventually the nations of Europe. Thus the word “Indo-European” sums up the group as a whole.

The descendants of Noah’s second son **Shem** comprised the Arabs, the Hebrews and the ancient Assyrians and Babylonians.

And from Noah’s third son **Ham** descended ultimately the Negroid and Mongoloid races, the so-called coloured races.

This dividing of the whole human race into three families in a way that does not concord with modern concepts of racial groupings, is not thereby discredited, but shown to be based upon a much clearer insight into the framework of history.

All races linked back to Noah

(a) ***The Indo-Europeans:*** We have noted that the Indo-European races trace their ancestry back to Noah, through *Japheth*.

(b) ***The Semites:*** Likewise, the Semitic races trace their ancestry back to Noah through *Shem*. This is true of both the Hebrews and the Arabs.

(c) ***The Negroids and Mongoloids:*** And we have already noted that, among the coloured races, there are people in Africa who trace their ancestry back to Noah through Nimrod, son of Cush, son of *Ham*. And likewise, Ham's father Noah is remembered under variations of the same name given in Genesis. The Chinese, the native Americans and the Hawaiians have also remembered their ancestor Noah.

So here we have ***all three branches of the human race tracing their ancestry to the same family*** – the family of Noah, who survived the Great Flood.

The *Royal Anthropological Institute Journal* published results from world races computed by Cavalli S. Forza and Edwards in 1963. They found that all mankind had come from one origin, in ***three main branches***.

And, of course, since you and I are descended from the same founding father, Noah – to whom all those royal families trace their ancestry, then you are related to royalty! You might say, without stretching it too far, that you have royal blood in your body!

But, in any case, I am blown away by how much archaeological evidence actually supports and confirms the biblical worldview and timeline – all of which modern day evolutionists (and their Globalist masters) seek to hide from the public.

14 Sodom and Gomorrah

LOST CITIES IN THE DESERT

OBJECTION: Cities destroyed by sulphur from the sky? That Genesis tale of Sodom and Gomorrah is just fantasy!

It is early morning. The five cities of the Jordan Plain awaken.

The merchants are opening their shops. Men are going to work, children to school. Mothers are making beds, preparing laundry.

But suddenly, a hush falls over the countryside. The jubilant chatter of the birds and the boisterous crowing of the roosters is silenced.

A man named Lot, his wife and two unmarried daughters are literally dragged from the city of Sodom by the two strangers who arrived in the city the day before. The animals begin to stir uneasily. But no one notices the 'sense of impending doom'...

Without further warning, the sky darkens. To everyone's horror, balls of fire begin to fall. Myriads of them. The sound of a mighty wind is heard... and a tempest of fire begins to rain upon the cities and the surrounding plain.

In an instant, varying-sized missiles of burning sulphur cascade down upon the buildings, setting them ablaze.

The terrified screams of man and beast fill the air. But this continues only for a moment. After a few breaths, all life is asphyxiated.

Everywhere the fire-balls crash, they stick and completely consume whatever they fall upon. Within minutes the entire plain and the cities upon it are reduced to pure ash!

Background information

According to the book of Genesis five cities – Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah, Zoboim and Zoar - sat on a fertile, watered plain near the Valley of Siddim (the present Dead Sea). In ancient times, the region was compared to the lush Garden of Eden. (Gen.13:10).

There are recorded two interesting events:

1. A battle between these 5 cities and 4 other kings. *"Now the Valley of Siddim was full of slime [bitumen] pits, and when the kings of Sodom and Gomorrah fled, some of the men fell into them and the rest fled to the hills."* (Gen. 14: 10)

2. The cities' destruction. *"The Lord rained down brimstone and fire [burning sulphur] upon them."* (Gen.19:24)

Lot, a nephew of the Hebrew patriarch Abraham, moved into Sodom to live.

The afternoon before the fiery judgment, came two strangers. Lot invited them to lodge in his house overnight.

That evening they disclosed their errand and urged Lot to leave the city. A band of homosexuals banged on the door, demanding that the visitors be surrendered to them.

This fast-action account is charged with emotion. Lot's family has to be literally pulled out of the city for their own safety, leaving behind two sons-in-law, to whom Lot's pleadings are as from one gone mad.

The raining of fire and brimstone (sulphur), in which the land was "smoking like a furnace", utterly destroyed the cities and turned the countryside into desert.

The "Sin of Sodom"

Most people associate Sodom & Gomorrah with only one vice - that of sexual perversion. And they were guilty of that, as are a large number of people not only today, but down through the ages.

However, our most complete source of information about these cities, the Bible, states that their sin was something else:

"Behold, THIS was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, PRIDE, FULNESS OF BREAD, and ABUNDANCE OF IDLENESS was in her and in her daughters, NEITHER DID SHE STRENGTHEN THE HAND OF THE POOR AND NEEDY. And they were HAUGHTY, and COMMITTED ABOMINATION before me: therefore I took them away as I saw good" (Eze.16:49, 50).

In the above passage, we learn that the root of their evil stemmed from their great wealth which led them to idleness and a disregard for those less fortunate than they. They were full of pride and haughtiness, thinking they were better than others.

Why were they so wealthy?

What was the source of their wealth? The mention of the "slime pits" (tar, asphalt, or bitumen pits) may provide the answer, since it was a most valuable commodity in those days, being used extensively all over the ancient world. Not only was it used as a coating for burnt mud bricks (as a preservative), it was used in the mortar. It was also used to provide a water-tight covering for things such as the famous "reed ark" Moses was placed in as a baby.

Even today, according to the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, "In its various forms bitumen is one of the most widely distributed of substances."

In the ancient Ebla tablets from Syria, one tablet listing some purchases and the price for each item in silver, shows that the highest price was paid for bitumen.

And the people of Sodom and Gomorrah had only to walk out into their "front yard" and gather it. They had no reason to engage in hard work. They had a "gold mine" there just for the taking.

This also explains why the kings of other great nations wanted to make them vassals - to participate in their great wealth through the extraction of tribute in the form of bitumen.

“And it came to pass in the days of Amraphel king of Shinar, Arioch king of Ellasar, Chedorlaomer king of Elam, and Tidal king of nations; That these made war with Bera king of Sodom, and with Birsha king of Gomorrah, Shinab king of Admah, and Shemeber king of Zeboiim, and the king of Bela, which is Zoar. And these were joined together in the vale of Siddim, which is the salt sea.” (Gen. 14:1-3)

The bitumen of Sodom and Gomorrah was easily accessed, because it was on the surface. Extraction required no oil wells.

No wonder Elam (occupying the territory of today's Iran) would not tolerate any move by Sodom and Gomorrah for independence. Even though a thousand kilometres distant, Elam considered their easily accessed oil important enough to warrant launching an invasion by coalition forces.

Have human attitudes changed? Today, oil is still regarded as a strategic resource justifying war. After all, a large proportion of our consumer products are derived from oil. (Think of the many applications of plastic, for example, in the manufacture of containers, furniture, and electronics, and so on.)

Was this bitumen involved in the disaster?

This bitumen could also possibly provide a catalyst in the conflagration which occurred in this plain. Bitumen, or slime pits, result from an underground petroleum reserve oozing through to the surface. And all oil reserves have natural gas associated with them, which also can seep into the air.

All of this is speculation, but the region yields the elements and evidences of an extremely cataclysmic event - one in which a lake was formed, blocking the river from its continued flow to the Red Sea, and which devastated the entire plain to the extent that nothing grows there.

The Dead Sea

This is the deepest spot on earth. It dips down between Israel and Jordan, some 1,300 feet (400 metres) below sea level, to what is known as the DEAD SEA.

In this lake no fish can live. The waters are 28 per cent salt, six times saltier than the ocean. Any careless fish that ventures from the River Jordan down into this evil lake chokes to death and is pickled.

In this water you cannot sink. When you jump in, you feel as if you are being thrown out again.

For me, this was too much of a temptation and I succumbed to lying back on the water like a floating cork, to read a book.

The scorching sun dries your skin almost at once. The thin crust of salt which the water has deposited on your body makes you look quite white. You must rinse this off quickly, or risk severe burning.

Virtually nothing grows here. The shore is utterly desolate... and in summer it bakes like an oven.

When I first saw this desert, the shallow water close to shore was choked with the stumps of ancient trees, encrusted in salt. There was a bizarre beauty about it.

It is hard to believe that this whole area was once like a beautiful garden, exceptionally fertile.

The cities lost

Tablets from Ebla dated to about 2000 BC named these cities and their kings.

The first century New Testament writer Jude wrote:

“Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.”
(Jude 7)

The Greek word used in Jude's original letter and translated as "*an example*", is "*deigma*", which signifies "*a thing shown*", "*a specimen*". It comes from the root word "*deiknumi*", "*to show*". Jude was saying that the ruins were visible in his day.

Also in the first century, the historian Josephus wrote:

The length of the lake [the Dead Sea] is five hundred and eighty furlongs, where it is extended as far as Zoar in Arabia; and its breadth is a hundred and fifty. The country of Sodom borders upon it...

He goes on to say that the lake

throws up black lumps of bitumen in many parts of it. These swim at the top of the water...

Then he adds:

There are still the remainders [remains made of ash] of that divine fire; and the traces (or shadows) of the five cities are still to be seen... (*Wars of the Jews, Bk IV, ch. 8, Sec. 4*)

It appears that in Josephus' time the location of these dead cities was known and pointed to. But after the destruction of Judea and the dispersion of the Jews this knowledge was forgotten.

For centuries travellers passed through this desolate waste, oblivious to the fact that the shapeless ruins close by were those of a city, so thorough had been the destruction.

In search of the remains

In our day popular speculations have placed the ruins of these lost cities on the floor of the Dead Sea.

In 1960, an American explorer, with the friendly cooperation of the Jordanian monarchy, attempted to make a search of the north, middle and south end of the Dead Sea bottom.

He located, photographed and displayed a few poorly identifiable objects that he claimed to have found at depths and locations that are incompatible with the actual depths in the named locations.

The only certainties that emerged were that trees once grew on the land now covered by water. And there was no evidence of any remains of cities. But these efforts and published data have led many to incorrectly believe that the cities rest beneath the Dead Sea.

Another attempt has been made more recently, but with similar inconclusive results.

Not under the sea

However, the cities cannot lie under the sea. Here's why.

You recall that in his statement above, Josephus says that:

1. The ruins were **VISIBLE IN HIS DAY – ON THE “BORDERS” OF THE DEAD SEA**, not hidden under it!
2. Bitumen was floating to the surface of the sea. This can only mean that the bitumen pits (of the old Vale of Siddim) were **SUBMERGED – BUT NOT THE RUINS OF THE CITIES**.
3. His description of the remains perfectly describes what can be seen today in these five ashen sites. They are visible on land. They are all whitish in colour; the shadows and shapes display all the visual characteristics of ancient cities and walls.

From surveying, mapping and dating the ancient shore lines in the salt caves of Mount Sedem [Mount Sodom], Hebrew University speleologist Amos Franklin concluded that the **SEA LEVEL** about 2,000 years ago was **HIGHER** than at present. (A. Frumkin, “Holocene Environmental Change Determined from Salt Caves of Mount Sedem, Israel”. *The Holocene*, 1, 1991, pp. 191-200)

The significance of that find is simply this: If the remains of Sodom and Gomorrah were visible in the first century (when the sea level was **HIGHER**), then the same remains **CANNOT** be underwater today, when the sea level is lower.

Under the drowned plain to the south?

So could the ruins be under the water of the drowned plain to the south of the Dead Sea?

The Jordan River flows into the Dead Sea, but there is no outflow from the sea. Thus, after the destruction of the cities, the level of the sea rose and eventually covered the plain to the south. So scholars suggested hopefully that the cities lay beneath these shallow waters.

More recently, however, Jordan River waters have been siphoned off for irrigation purposes. This lowered the lake level and largely exposed the southern plain. But there was no sign of any ruined cities there.

Or the ruins found to the east?

Could the remains of Numeira and Bab edh Dhra on the east side of the Dead Sea be the sites of Sodom and Gomorrah?

The remains of Numeira and Bab edh Dhra represent two of five ruined sites in that area.

There are several reasons – if you believe the biblical account - that these sites do not qualify. One reason is simply this - they are not "in the plain" but instead on the plateau, some 500 feet above the plain. When William Albright and Melvin Kyle discovered the site of Bab ed-Dra in 1924, they understood immediately that this site was not a candidate for Sodom, Gomorrah or any of the cities of the plain:

It is most emphatically not a city, but rather a temporary encampment, like Gilgal, or perhaps rather like the somewhat shadowy Baal-peor of Moab. Since the plain of Bab ed-Dra is not suitable for cultivation, and is high above the gorge of the Seil ed-Dra, it would in any case be a very unsatisfactory place for a town. As a festival site for the inhabitants of the oases below it is admirable, since it is situated on the first convenient rise of terrain above the central oasis of el-Mezra'ah, some five hundred feet above the level of the Dead Sea. (William Foxwell Albright, *The Archaeology of Palestine and the Bible*, 1932, p. 136)

The largest site, Bab ed-Dra is just 10 acres, while Numeira is only 2! Not very large for important cities.

The evidence shows that these sites were indeed high places, or places visited by pilgrims.

The cemetery at Bab ed-Dra is said to contain over 20,000 graves which hold over 500,000 people. Could that many people live in a 10 acre town? Of course not. But that they may have been high places and cemeteries of the cities of the plain is a possibility.

With the cities completely destroyed, perhaps their cemeteries and high places were spared as a testimony of the fact that an extremely large population once lived in the area.

Oh, and something else. The New Testament apostle Peter mentions the condition of the remains of Sodom and Gomorrah in the first century of our era:

“And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ASHES condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly” (2 Peter 2:6).

This passage tells us that the cities were ASHES.

Adherents to the theory of the five sites on the Jordanian side of the Dead Sea (Bab edh Dhra, Numeira, etc) have failed to note that these are NOT ashen.

These sites do show evidence of being burned. Archaeologists unearthed a thick layer of black ash. But the sites are NOT ash, as the Bible says Sodom and Gomorrah were. They contain a large number of burnt artefacts but they also contain foodstuffs (including carbonised grapes which still have their skins) and other articles that are still intact.

Careful examination of the remains of these show them to be typical of those destroyed in war. Archaeologists have found wood and other flammable materials in VARYING STAGES OF DECAY.

This is not compatible with the destruction of the “cities of the plain” as described in the Bible! There is no evidence whatever that sulphur

(brimstone) was involved in their overthrow! There is no evidence of fire from the heavens.

Moreover, the land east of the Dead Sea was anciently known as Moab, Ammon or Seir (Edom).

Deuteronomy 2:8-12 states that the traditional inhabitants of Moab were Emims and those inhabiting Seir were a group called Horims, who were later dispossessed by the descendants of Esau.

Thus the lands bordering the *east side* of the Dead Sea were *not Canaanite*.

But the “Cities of the Plain” were unquestionably Canaanite cities, since they are listed to define the borders of Canaanite territory (Gen. 10:19). The Canaanite territory was to the *west* of the Dead Sea.

The lost cities located

The identification was made in 1989.

There is a mountain called Mount Sodom. This long, narrow mountain is a salt dome - made entirely of salt. Behind it is the squarish shape of an ancient city. Since the mountain is called SODOM, could this adjacent city have been SODOM?

In this region are five sites which share one thing in common. In all the world, only these five sites share this feature. Within their perimeters everything has been totally burned to ASH.

According to the Bible, five cities which lay in this region were destroyed by falling fire and brimstone (sulphur) and turned to ash.

Of these five cities, Sodom is always listed first. Presumably, it was the most important, or largest, of the five. And of the five sites we have found, the largest is adjacent to Mount Sodom.

Nearby is the smallest of the sites. The Genesis record states that when Lot fled Sodom to escape its destruction, he wanted to go to Zoar, which was close by and was just “a little city”. Again, this site has been totally turned to ash.

The second largest, as well as the best preserved of the sites, lies between Masada and the Dead Sea. Since Gomorrah was listed second in the biblical account, we conclude that these ashen remains qualify to be the remnants of Gomorrah.

This has to be the eeriest ghost town on earth. One experiences an oven by day, and at night the stark silence of death.

This whole region reeks of some ancient curse.

I still remember vividly my first visit to this haunting place.

A friend from Western Australia had been working with me at an archaeological site in Turkey. We were now bound for Israel. Since Trevor's air ticket was with Jordanian Airlines, he was obliged to travel via Amman, in Jordan, and come overland to Israel by means of the Allenby Bridge.

I promised to wait in Jerusalem for two days. We would then travel to the remains of Sodom and Gomorrah.

So Trevor flew to Amman, then boarded a bus that would take him to the River Jordan.

There he attempted to cross the border into Israel. But the border was closed! It was a Jordanian holiday. The next day he made another attempt to cross the border - and the border was closed. It was an Israeli holiday. He tried for a third day to cross over the border... and once again the border was closed.

Poor Trevor! ...another Jordanian holiday.

I would have appreciated Trevor's company for exploring inside some of the structures at Gomorrah. My idea had been to tie a rope around my waist, with Trevor holding onto the other end. Since the formations were of ash, it could well be dangerous to enter any of them alone. Who knew whether, after these 4,000 years, a ceiling might suddenly collapse? In that event, Trevor might (hopefully) find me quickly and help get me out.

Not so! With Trevor delayed and my schedule tight, I went to the site alone.

It was two hours before sunset. The lengthening shadows accentuated the ashen shapes rising above the desert. One could make out outlines of walls.

From the start, I was struck by the contrast between the brown of the stony desert and the white of a city that had been turned to ashes. These were separate and most distinct from each other.

The eeriness

After a preliminary exploration, I located a spot on the ashes to lie down and sleep.

That night, one might as well have been in a tomb – it was so deathly silent. Time after time I would drop off to sleep, only to almost instantly reawaken. The silence wakens you.

Each time I would stare at the sky overhead and note that the stars hardly seemed to have moved. Eventually the moon peered up above the horizon and crept slowly higher over the Dead Sea.

It was now casting eerie shadows on the remains around me ...structures composed totally of ash. It was weird, all alone under a full moon in this city of the dead. I could hardly wait for sunrise!

The sun popped up from behind the Jordanian hills, blazing hot. In no time I was perspiring. Soon the plain was a furnace. In this desert the temperature could soar to 49 degrees Celsius in the shade.

This time of the year, the maximum time one could explore was about 30 minutes. Dehydration was quick.

This Dead Sea Valley is an immense oven, in which many have died of thirst in a matter of hours.

I would soon find myself searching for the rare spot of shade - a place to sit down... and drink... drink... drink...

And it might be all of another half hour before one was ready to brave the direct sun again.

Heat reflected up from the ashes.

Structures

There was distinct form here. Remains of buildings, one of them five stories high. All ash now. This place had suffered tremendous destruction.

Periodically there were openings in the walls, entrances to the city, where you see actual "streets".

These wide avenues had structures on both sides, and were flanked by side streets. The large piles of ash made walking difficult down these streets.

Sodom and Gomorrah were Canaanite cities, according to the Bible. And the cities of the Canaanites were constructed with double walls, with buildings atop them.

And were these shapes once windows? One became aware that nothing one's eyes saw was stone... or earth... or sand. Not any more. I was looking here at ash - ash from a tremendous fire.

And there it was - the city wall - a double wall, with buttresses coming out from it at right angles. These had been built to strengthen the wall.

There were traces of sphinxes. And close by the clear remains of a ziggurat, or stepped pyramid. This was built upon a rectangular platform, just as were the ziggurats of ancient Mesopotamia.

One of the interesting features of these sites is the layering present in ALL of the ashen material. Hundreds and thousands of layers are present, none very thick. In very high temperature fires, and/or in very hot flames containing alkali metals or alkaline-earth materials (for example, sodium and calcium) the positive and negative ions attract and repel, resulting in this layering effect.

We know the flames had to be extremely hot in order to completely burn stone and metals; and we know there is a tremendous amount of sodium (salt) in the region - the Dead Sea has the highest concentration of salt of any body of water on earth. And the largest salt dome, Mt. Sodom, is also in the area.

In a letter, Mary Nell Wyatt reports:



In 1989, we visited the site just below Masada and took samples of the whitish material which we all discovered broke right off in our hands and disintegrated into particles the consistency of talcum powder. It certainly LOOKED like ash! But what to do about this information was a puzzle. After all, these sites have been right out in plain sight since their destruction in about 1897 BC.

Samples taken for testing DID prove to be ASH! We were convinced, but we knew there had to be better evidence than just this – evidence that would convince a skeptical world. We began to pray that the Lord would help us to find this (unknown) evidence.

The Clinching Evidence

Both American explorer Ron Wyatt and myself had separately encountered this experience of going in, not seeing it... then praying... and going back, each of us separately, to find that RAIN HAD JUST FALLEN!

In the desert? Yes, rain is a rare occurrence in this area. There is as little as $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ an inch of rain a year (or 6.25 to 12.5 millimetres).

The rain had splashed away the thin film of ash that normally blows on top of the evidence, concealing it from sight.

But now, there they were: embedded in the ash were balls of burnt sulphur - brimstone - probably millions of them! Here was actual evidence that fire and brimstone once rained upon this area!

As I bent to pick up a block of ash, I noticed small yellow balls embedded in it. Each ball was (or had been) surrounded by a black crystalline shell, and around that was a reddish-black ring in the ash.

Prying one of these out, I recognised it as sulphur. Smelling it, I KNEW it was sulphur. Here was the physical evidence. All through the ashen remains were round balls of sulphur encapsulated in burnt (crystalline) sulphur.

As we scanned the site, at first not knowing what to look for, we saw these sulphur balls literally everywhere.

Before, we hadn't been able to see them because the loose ash had covered everything. But now the rain had washed away the loose ash and caused a section to fall away, revealing these sulphur balls embedded through the ashen material.

Had once been on fire

The reddish-black crystalline material surrounding the sulphur balls showed that they had once been on fire.

It happened for me on more than one expedition. Of my eight expeditions to Gomorrah, I believe it was on the fifth one that I took some professional cameramen in with me. I wanted so badly for the world to see these unique sulphur balls. But they were normally covered over. And, since I knew that prayer worked – for me it had worked on many occasions – I had prayed again before leaving Australia. This would also be my wife Josephine's first visit. I so much wanted her to see them, too!

It was dark... and about 9 pm. Our 4-wheel drive bumped its way across the desert and entered the ruins. We turned right into a cul-de-sac and stopped.

I was seated next to the driver. In the darkness, I threw the door open and slid to the ground. From her seat behind me, Josephine did likewise. She had a flashlight in her hand. She shone it straight down and screamed!

“Look! It’s been raining! See the impressions in the ash?”

Then she shone the light between my feet.

“There it is! A sulphur ball?” Was she excited!

The cameramen got out and ran around to our side. I picked up the sulphur ball – about the size of a kid’s marble – and examined it.

“Does anyone have a spoon?” I called. Brett the driver fumbled in his bag and handed me one.

“Matches, anyone?” They were offered to me quickly. Everyone was so-oh excited. Except for me, this was everyone’s first expedition.

I placed the sulphur ball on the spoon. And struck the match. A purple-bluish light began to grow bigger. It lit up the area around so we could lay out our ground sheets.

Here was something that long, long ago had come out of the sky, burning. The ash had then smothered the ball and the fire had gone out. And now, 4,000 years later, here we were re-igniting and finishing off the fire.

It seems that as these burning balls of brimstone fell from the sky, they set everything ablaze. And they burned right through everything. And as they burned, after a while, molten material surrounding the sulphur cut it off from the oxygen, preserving it in the interior of the ashes.

What we call a "burn ring" surrounds each capsule -suggesting that the ash itself was vitrified.

It appears that as the ashen material erodes and these sulphur balls become exposed to the surface, they fall out of their capsules. Thus they



Burning a lump of sulphur

can be found lying all over the ground. However, we were not able to see them earlier because they had been covered with the loose layer of ash.

The biblical report claims that "the Lord **rained brimstone** and fire" on the cities. And we might ask, how does rain fall? In drops, of course!

And this burning brimstone DID fall in drops, which landed in the pattern that rain would fall.

This burned sulphur covers the remains of the five cities discovered.

Of course, anyone can deny a find like this, but that does not alter the fact that Ron Wyatt and team have discovered the ashen remains of what must be the cities of the plain - and Jonathan Gray and team have in person confirmed this discovery.

The clinching evidence, I believe, is the pressed powder balls of brimstone inside burn capsules, and surrounded by burn rings embedded

in ash – a phenomenon which, as far as can be determined, is found
NOWHERE ELSE IN THE WORLD.

So it was that as the sun arose for the last time upon the cities of the plain, the people thought to commence another day of debauchery and riot. All were eagerly planning business or their pleasure, and the messengers who had visited to warn them were derided for their fears and their warnings. Like a thunder peal from an unclouded sky, fell fire on the doomed capital.

Which accords with the fact that we have balls of brimstone.

What a blow to the critics!

15 Were the Hebrews really in Egypt?

IN A TUNNEL UNDER HOT SANDS

OBJECTION: There is no evidence that the ancestors of the Jews ever lived in Egypt – or that Joseph ever lived.

We trudged over the scorched sand of the desert – amid Egypt's oldest ruins.

Through the friendly influence of Dr Ali Hassan, Egyptian Director of Antiquities, my wife Josephine and I were now to descend into tunnels far beneath the earth.

We had first to break wax seals on two doors.

Soon we were in ancient chambers 110 feet under the desert.

The walls were lined with shimmering blue tiles.

Sadly, salt crystals had begun to invade the ancient walls. In fact, salt was attacking many of the old stone monuments of Egypt. And this tunnel system was not escaping that destruction. We wondered, Who used these tunnels 4,000 years ago? Why were they constructed?

Egypt boasts a glorious past.

Some 900 miles upstream from the mouth of the Nile sits Abu Simbel.

Nowhere else in Egypt, perhaps nowhere else on earth, is there anything like Abu Simbel.

In the 13th century BC, on the banks of the Nile, Ramses II commanded his architects to build two magnificent temples from adjacent pinkish sandstone cliffs. The work is said to have taken up to 15 years.

In one cliff Ramses carved out a jewel-like temple dedicated to his beautiful wife Nefertari.

In another cliff just 100 steps distant, workmen smoothed away the surface to a height of 108 feet and there carved 4 colossal 67 foot figures, all seated, all alike, of Ramses himself. Each would weigh 1,200 tons.

Tunnelling 200 feet inside the cliff, the builders then hollowed out great halls. Chamber after chamber they adorned with carvings of great beauty.

Here the ideals of the Egyptian sculpture, grandeur, and solemnity, are carried to perfection.

One may imagine the pomp that attended the dedication of this temple – the beat of drums, the blast of trumpets, and the clanging of other musical instruments, as the monarch and his queen led the procession, followed by the priests.

For a while after Ramses' death, the priests continued to maintain the temples. But by 1000 BC, Lower Nubia had begun to fade from the pages of history – and the sands of the Western Desert started to invade the Great Temple.

Abu Simbel had obviously been forgotten by classical times, else it would surely have been listed as one of the seven wonders of the world.

In 668 BC, two Greek mercenaries climbed the sand hills to carve their names on the statues.

In 1813, 2,500 years later, Swiss traveller John Burckhardt travelled far up the Nile and stumbled upon this remote spot.

He gasped as he saw the tops of four immense statues poking out of the sand.

In 1817, Giovanni Belzani, an Italian who disguised himself as an Arab, penetrated the sand barrier. He went in, with torches.

Eventually much of the sand was cleared away from the front, outside.

In the 1870s, Amelia Edwards visited, and wrote about her visit.

The Interior

Inside is a dim chamber where two lines of towering figures of the Pharaoh as Osiris confront one another across the central aisle.

Still deeper, and much darker, is the inner shrine where the king sits side by side with the supreme gods Amon, Horus and Ptah.

At Dawn

At any time Abu Simbel is an awesome sight, but at the moment of dawn it is incredible.

When the rising sun tops the mountains across the river and flashes full on the façade, the figure of the sun god seems animated by the sudden light, as though to step forward to greet the morning.

The first rays briefly shine through the entry, penetrating the darkness to strike the four gloomy deities 180 feet within the bowels of the mountain.

Famous Names

Ramses is one famous name from ancient Egypt.

Another is Tutankhamen, who was buried in a 6 million dollar coffin!

However, Tutankhamen is famous for the reason that his was the only unspoilt royal grave found in our time.

While other tombs had been robbed long ago, Tutankhamen's tomb was hidden by rubble. It was discovered in 1922.

Despite the unbelievable wealth found stored in his tomb, Tutankhamen was a comparatively minor personage in ancient Egyptian history.

However, I would like to share with you some information about a most incredible individual in the ancient records, a man from the 3rd Dynasty, called “Imhotep”.

Our archaeological team in Egypt has come face to face with many surprises. And among the most amazing of them all is this man Imhotep.

The story of Imhotep uncannily parallels the story of the biblical Joseph.

Of course, scholars have claimed that there is no evidence that the Genesis stories actually occurred, that there is no evidence that the ancestors of the Jews ever lived in Egypt, or that Joseph ever lived.

However, I shall now share with you an astonishing story...

For many years, Egyptologists had even doubted that Imhotep had been a real person. They found it difficult to believe the various accomplishments credited to him.

Imhotep has been termed the ‘Leonardo da Vinci’ of ancient Egypt, but he was more than that. Da Vinci gained the reputation of genius, Imhotep was eventually elevated to the status of a god.

The historian Manetho wrote that “during his reign [that is, the reign of Djoser of the 3rd Dynasty], lived Imouthes, i.e. Imhotep, who, because of his medical skill has the reputation of Asclepius, the Greek god of medicine, among the Egyptians and who was the inventor of the art of building with hewn stone.”

Now it was this statement that caused specialists to doubt the existence of a real man named Imhotep.

But in 1926, the question was settled once and for all. When excavations were carried out at the Step Pyramid at Sakkara, south of Cairo, fragments of a statue of Pharaoh Djoser were found.

The base was inscribed with the names of Djoser and of “Imhotep, Chancellor of the King of Lower Egypt, Chief under the King, Administrator of the Great Palace, Hereditary Lord, High Priest of Heliopolis, Imhotep the Builder, the Sculptor, the Maker of Stone

Vases...”.

Yes, Imhotep was a real man.

Second in Command

Is this an echo of the biblical Joseph? Notice how the book of Genesis describes his high rank under the Pharaoh:

“Thou shalt be over my house, and according unto thy word shall all my people be ruled: only in the throne will I be greater than thou. And he made him to ride in the second chariot which he had; and they cried before him, Bow the knee: and he made him ruler over all the land of Egypt. And Pharaoh said unto Joseph, I am Pharaoh, and without thee shall no man lift up his hand or foot in all the land of Egypt.” (Genesis 41:40,43,44)

It sounds as if Joseph was the first person ever given such an honour by a Pharaoh.

Who was this Joseph?

Anyway, who was this Joseph?

Joseph is perhaps best known to readers of the Genesis epic as that young Hebrew lad whose father made for him a multi-coloured coat. He was one of twelve brothers.

The elder brothers had long hated Joseph because he was their father’s “favourite”.

To make it worse, Joseph told his brothers of some dreams he had had. “Listen to this dream,” said Joseph. “We were binding sheaves of grain. And lo, my sheaf arose and stood upright. And, behold, your sheaves stood around and bowed down to my sheaf.”

His brothers retorted, “Shall you really reign over us?” And they hated him more, for his dreams, and his words.

And Joseph related yet another dream to them: “Look, the sun and the moon, our Dad and Mum, and eleven stars, you, my brothers, bowed down to me.”

The time came when Jacob sent his son Joseph to visit his ten elder brothers, who were away tending their fathers’ flocks. The brothers conspired to get rid of Joseph. They first tossed him into a dry pit, but later took him out and sold him to some passing merchants who were en route to Egypt.

The brothers then dipped Joseph’s coat in animal blood and reported to the old father that his son must have been killed by a wild animal. Meanwhile Joseph was dragged to Egypt.

In Egypt, Joseph was sold to a man named Potipher, captain of the Pharaoh’s guard. This man grew to admire Joseph.

When, however, Joseph resisted the advances of Potipher’s wife, she accused him of a sexual attack and Joseph ended up in prison.

It was while in prison that Joseph shared time with a butler and a baker, both of whom had been in the service of the king. On the same night both men had dreams which Joseph interpreted, informing the butler that he would be restored to royal favour, but that the baker was to die. And this is what happened.

Meanwhile, Joseph remained in prison, forgotten. However, sometime later when the king himself had a dream which greatly troubled him, the butler remembered Joseph and told the Pharaoh.

Joseph was summoned from the prison and brought into the king’s presence, where he was asked to interpret the king’s dream. Joseph informed the king that there were to come upon Egypt 7 years of prosperity followed by a 7-year famine. Joseph gave credit to God for the information. And he suggested to the Pharaoh how to prepare for the famine.

The Pharaoh was so impressed by Joseph’s wisdom that he not only liberated this foreigner, but installed him in a position of influence.

Joseph’s main position was that of a prime minister.

And this is where we come back to Imhotep. The man known as Imhotep appears to be the first who could boast of such a broad range of authority in ancient Egypt.

7-Year Famine

There are records of many, many viziers throughout Egyptian history, but the first evidence which connects Imhotep with Joseph is an amazing inscription found carved on a large rock of the island of Sihel just below the First Cataract of the Nile.

The inscription claims to be a copy of a document written by Djoser in the 18th year of his reign, this copy being written over 1,000 years after the events it claims to be relating. It goes on to tell of a 7 year famine and 7 years of plenty.

Here we have an inscription which tells a story of Pharaoh Djoser asking his vizier, Imhotep, to help him with the problem of a great 7 year famine.

Imhotep tells him he must consult the god because the answer is not in him.

Then the Pharaoh dreams a dream which foretells the event.

Next follow 7 years of plenty, which is reverse from the biblical account. The Pharaoh levies a tax on all of the population except for the priesthood.

All of the components of the biblical account are present in this inscription, except that the story has been “Egyptian-ised” to fit their religious beliefs.

In the early 1980s, my friend Ron Wyatt was shown the tombs of two officials from the reign of the Pharaoh Djoser, and the inscriptions of the officials both state that they “collected grain for a 7 year famine”. But, by the mid-80s, both of these tombs were closed.

Significance of His Name

The name “**Imhotep**”, in ancient Egyptian, is translated to mean “*the voice, or mouth, of Im*”. However, there is no record of a god in Egypt called “**Im**”.

But in the ancient Scriptures is the God “**I Am**”.

*“And God said unto Moses, I am that **I am**: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, **I Am** hath sent me unto you.”* (Ex. 3:14)
*“Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, **I am**.”* (John 8:58)

God Told Moses, “*Tell the Pharaoh that “I Am” has sent you*”. It appears that “I Am” was the name by which the Egyptians had known Joseph’s God. Could “**Im**” have been “**I Am**”?

The name that the Bible says was given to Joseph by the Pharaoh, “Zaphenath-paneah”, has been translated by some to mean, “the God lives; the God speaks”. Since we do not fully understand the meaning of the Egyptian “Hotep”, it is quite possible that the translation of Imhotep, “*The voice of I am*”, is identical to the biblical name of Joseph, “*the God lives; the God speaks*”.

Physician

Imhotep is the earliest **physician** whose historical records survive. And although Joseph isn’t mentioned as being a physician, the Bible gives one very important clue to this:

*“And Joseph commanded **his servants the physicians** to embalm his father: and the physicians embalmed Israel.”* (Gen. 50:2)

Here the physicians are specifically stated to be under Joseph.

But later, when Imhotep became established as the “god of healing”, it is the **manner** in which he healed that ties him directly to Joseph. Ancient Greek writings mention a great sanctuary at Memphis where people came from everywhere to seek cures from Imhotep. They would pray to him, make offerings and then spend the night in this sanctuary, which was a sort of Lourdes of ancient Egypt.

While they were sleeping, the god Imhotep was said to come to people in their *dreams* and cure them. Is there a connection between Joseph and dreams?

Remember, it was Joseph's dream about him and his brothers binding sheaves, that was one of the causes of their great jealousy of him, after he related to them that he had dreamt their sheaves stood up and bowed to him. *"And his brethren said to him, Shalt thou indeed reign over us? Or shalt thou indeed have dominion over us? And they hated him yet the more for his dreams, and for his words... Come now therefore, and let us slay him, and cast him into some pit, and we will say, Some evil beast hath devoured him: and we shall see what will become of his dreams."* (Gen.37:8,20)

In the records, Imhotep was associated with doing good by means of dreams. So was Joseph.

Wisdom

The biblical account also speaks of Joseph's wisdom:

"And Pharaoh said unto Joseph, Forasmuch as God hath shewed thee all this, there is none so discreet and wise as thou art." (Gen.41:39)

Again, the evidence points to Imhotep. Imhotep was also revered for his wisdom. In several inscriptions from much later times, reference is made to the *"words of Imhotep"*. For example, in *Song from the Tomb of King Intef*, we read: "I have heard the words of Imhotep and Hardedef...", and it goes on to explain that their "sayings" were recited in his day.

It could be that after Joseph's death, others copied his wise sayings and took credit for them, perhaps adding a bit of their own and changing things to suit them. As these sayings were passed down through several generations, instead of being attributed to Imhotep, they were attributed to Ptahotep, "the voice of" the Egyptian creator, "Ptah".

Lived 110 Years

At the end of these Egyptian manuscripts, the writer states that he is near death, having lived *110 years*, and that he received honours from the king

exceeding those of his ancestors, in other words, he received the most honours ever given a man by a Pharaoh.

Notice the biblical parallel concerning Joseph: “*And Joseph lived 110 years.*” (Gen.50:22)

Not a Member of Pharaoh’s Family

Standard practice was for the Pharaoh always to appoint men to office as soon as he took the throne, with family members being the highest ranked.

Imhotep was not Djoser’s vizier earlier in his reign. In fact, no mention is made at all of Imhotep on Djoser’s earlier monuments. The architect of Djoser’s tomb built at Beit Khallaf, which was probably undertaken soon after he became king, was not Imhotep. In this earlier tomb, which is similar to those of preceding dynasties, there are clay sealings of jars which record Djoser’s name, his mother’s name, and the names of numerous other officials from his reign, but not Imhotep’s, which indicates that Imhotep had not yet been appointed to his position.

In some inscriptions, his titles indicate that he was not a member of the royal family, but a ‘self-made man’.

All available information about Imhotep continues to point to his identification with Joseph.

Prince of On, Heliopolis

Imhotep was also “priest of Heliopolis”, the biblical “On”.

Now, in the story of Joseph, we learn that his father-in-law was the “priest of On” at the time of Joseph’s marriage: “*And Pharaoh called Joseph’s name Zaphnathpaaneah; and he gave him to wife Asenath the daughter of Potipherah priest of On.*” (Gen.41:45)

The original reading of this text is not “priest” of On, but “Prince” of On. Joseph married the daughter of the Prince of On.

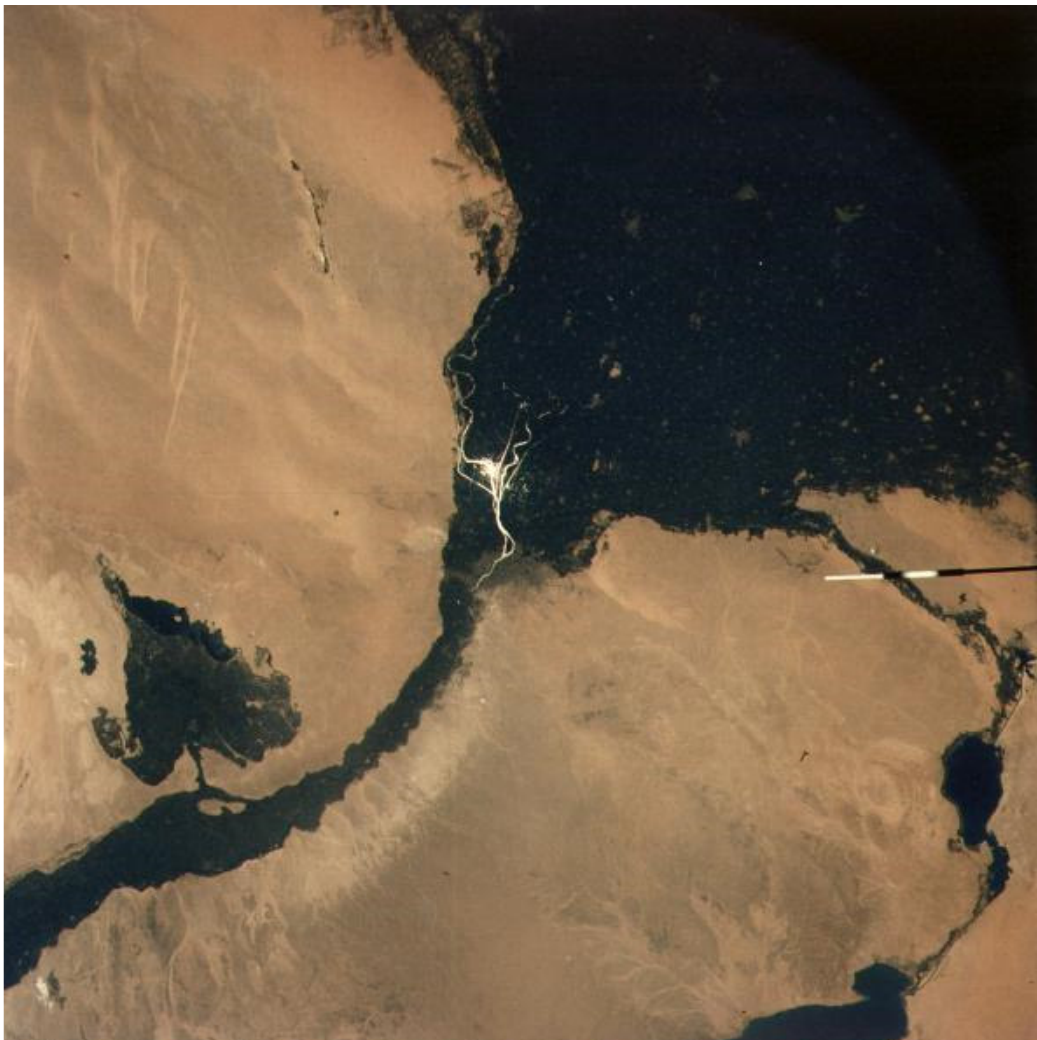
Joseph's Canal

The town of Medinet-el-Faiyum, 80 miles (128 kilometres) south of Cairo, in the middle of the fertile Faiyum oasis, is extolled as the 'Venice of Egypt'. It sits in a vast depression.

In its lush gardens grow oranges, mandarins, peaches, olives, grapes and pomegranites.

Faiyum owes these delicious fruits to the artificial canal, over 200 miles (320 kilometres) long, which brings in Nile water and turns this region, otherwise desert, into a paradise.

We do know that between 1850 and 1650 BC a canal was built to keep the branches of the Nile permanently open, enabling water to fill Lake Quaran and keep the land fertile.



This canal ran parallel to the Nile northward to permit the flood waters of the Nile to flow into a natural basin. When the flood state was past, the impounded waters could be returned to the Nile by means of a second, shorter canal. Examination of the remnants of this system indicates that it could well have doubled the tillable soil of the Nile Valley through which it passed.

This canal was so effective that it still successfully functions today. There is no record of who built the canal, but for thousands of years it has only been known by one name. In Arabic it's the "*Bahr Yusef*". This translates into English as "*The Waterway of Joseph*".

It is known by this name throughout Egypt. It is so named on modern maps. The farmers say it was the Joseph of the Bible, Pharaoh's "Grand Vizier", who planned it.

This great canal made possible the growing of a lot more grain in Egypt. During the 7 years of plenty, this extra grain was harvested and placed in enormous grain pits especially dug below the ground level.

Later, during the 7 year famine, food-seekers converged on Egypt to purchase supplies.

Architect of the First Pyramid

It was Imhotep who is credited with having designed the first pyramid and building in hewn stone instead of all mud brick.

If we look closely at ancient Egyptian history, we can see evidence that it was during the time of Djoser that Egypt became a truly great nation. After all, it had gathered the wealth of all the surrounding nations by selling them grain during the famine.

Great Administrative Centre

And during the 7 years of plenty, the people, under Joseph's wise guidance, began to organise a great administrative centre which would handle the selling of the grain to all the surrounding nations.

A large complex was built which contained the future burial site of the Pharaoh, but also included a walled-in centre which contained huge grain bins.

The Sakkara Centre

The Sakkara complex was part of the sprawling metropolis of Memphis, the royal capital.

It contained what is today termed the Step Pyramid.

Surrounding the Step Pyramid and its complex is a very beautiful and elaborate wall.

At the main entrance on the east wall at the southern end, one enters a long hall of 40 columns, 20 on each side.

Each column is shaped as a cob of corn, and the individual segments of golden coloured corn can be seen. This hints at the purpose of the building.

Each column is connected to the main wall by a perpendicular wall, forming small “rooms” between each column.

Large Pits

As you exit this colonnade and walk straight ahead, you come to a series of very large pits which extend deep into the earth. These are extremely large in size – I estimate them at perhaps 60 feet by 40 feet, by 100 feet deep - much larger than any burial chambers.

Walking past one of the pits, I asked a guide, “What do you think this is?” He replied, “Oh that was a tomb, to bury someone in!”

Hmmm...

However, I shall tell you now that these pits

- (a) are all centrally accessible by a connecting tunnel,
- (b) extend to well above ground level, and
- (c) one of them has a staircase extending down to the bottom.

For this reason, we know that they were not built as tombs. If they were, they would have been constructed underground and they certainly would not have been so incredibly large. These massive structures extend to well above ground level, which indicates that they were not hidden, as were tombs. Because the ancient Egyptians buried their dead with so much valuable material and provisions for their “afterlife”, plundering of tombs was always their biggest fear. Therefore, we know that these massive pits had another purpose.

Also, in the cities of other ancient civilisations, whenever large bins such as these were uncovered, they were recognised as “storage bins”, but in Egypt, the scholars tend to term everything they find a “tomb”.

However, in the Pharaoh’s burial complex under the pyramid, we find matching bins for the king’s and his family’s afterlife, and in these bins were found grain and other food stuffs.

Joseph the Administrator

In the Genesis account, we learn that Joseph appointed men throughout the land of Egypt to oversee the gathering and storing of the grain in all the cities, during the 7 years of plenty.

Later, during the famine, it was he who gave the orders for the distribution of the grain.

“The famine was over all the face of the earth: and Joseph opened all the storehouses, and sold unto the Egyptians.” (Gen.41:56)

Also, when foreigners came to purchase grain, they went to Joseph the governor. So it turned out that when Joseph’s brothers came to Egypt to buy grain, they would eventually find themselves bowing to Joseph.

The Sakkara Bins

We believe it is Sakkara to which they came, where the remains of this fantastic complex are preserved. And it was here that Pharaoh Djoser had 11 extremely large pits constructed which can only be grain storage bins.

Every city had stored grain from its region, but at this complex at Sakkara, we have these massive pits which would have stored an incredible amount of grain – more than a single city would have needed.

At the entrance to the complex, as we described earlier, are 40 small cubicles, each just the right size to hold a single person who could administer the receipt of payment from people coming to purchase grain.

They would then have received their bags of grain.

The design of the pits is impressive... Of the 11, only one contains a very elaborate stairway extending all the way to the bottom. All the pits are connected to each other by a subterranean tunnel. The pits were filled and the tops were sealed with wooden timbers and stone. And all of the grain could be accessed from one entrance. There is a single entrance into the pits from outside the wall enclosure of the complex.

Oh, and something else. Grain was found in the floor of these pits.

Unique

The complex at Sakkara is unique. No complex like it has ever been found.

A great deal has been written about this complex, and most mention the uniqueness of it, something they cannot explain.

I suggest to you that the circumstantial evidence fits the story of Joseph perfectly.

The Search for Imhotep's Tomb

We know from the biblical account that Joseph died in Egypt and was embalmed and placed in a coffin:

“So Joseph died, being an hundred and ten years old: and they embalmed him, and he was put in a coffin in Egypt.” (Gen.50.26)

“In a Coffin in Egypt”. These are the very last words in the book of Genesis.

However, when the nation of Israel left Egypt some two centuries later, at the time of the Exodus, Joseph's bones were taken with them:

“And Moses took the bones of Joseph with him: for he had straitly sworn the children of Israel, saying, God will surely visit you; and ye shall carry up my bones away hence with you.” (Ex.13:19)

One of the big mysteries for Egyptologists has been the tomb of Imhotep: they simply cannot find it, although they know it should be somewhere in Sakkara. In the *Guidebook to Sakkara* by Jill Kamil, “The Tomb of Imhotep” is listed as a subject heading, only to explain that it has not been found.

Now, suppose that Imhotep was Joseph, and if Joseph's body was taken away, could it be that his tomb was possibly taken over and used by someone else? And would this not erase the original identity of the tomb from being that of Imhotep?

Some Clues to the Location of Imhotep's Tomb

Ancient Greek texts spoke of a place near Memphis where people came to worship “Imhotep” and be healed.

Excavators at Sakkara, working very near the Step Pyramid, have found an incredible labyrinth of underground tunnels. These were full of mummified ibis and bulls.

Over the centuries, great waves of sand had swept in from the Sahara Desert and completely covered the area, until in 1850 the French archaeologist Mariette discovered the place where the sacred bulls were buried. The wind blowing over the shifting sand had exposed a small opening.

The bulls were in coffins of solid granite polished as smooth as glass. Their average weight is 150 tons!

The Egyptians, of course, were pagans, who worshipped many different animals as gods.

Inscriptions and coins found here show that people came here to be healed!

What Mariette had found here, then, was the famous “sanctuary to Imhotep” written of by the Greeks.

After the deification of Imhotep by the Egyptians as “god of medicine”, he was given the title, “Chief One of the Ibis”, and this was the connection of this labyrinth with Imhotep.

The hundreds of thousands of ibises that were mummified and brought here, filling these tunnels, were a tribute to Imhotep.

Connected to a Pit and a Funerary Chamber

These galleries, it was later found, were connected to a pit, and the pit extended down to a funerary chamber which contained an empty coffin. The chamber belonged to a large mastaba tomb.

And in the tomb’s storerooms were jars whose clay stoppers had the seal impression of Pharaoh Djoser! Here is absolute proof that this was the tomb of a very important person of Djoser’s reign.

No inscriptions were found on the walls and the sarcophagus was empty. But even more importantly, this mastaba is oriented to the north instead of to the east, as the other pyramids are. This was an important tomb of someone from Djoser’s time, but the sarcophagus was empty, and it had titles applicable to Joseph on it!

There was even found an inscription by an anonymous Greek who came here, telling how he was cured, and it was through a dream!

Once again, the evidence speaks loudly of a wonderful story from Genesis, the story of Joseph.

The Prison Pyramid

The pyramid of Teta, first king of Dynasty 6, is called by the local populace “The Prison Pyramid”. Local tradition says that it is built near

the ruins of the prison where Joseph was confined. The pyramid is located near Sakkara, in a likely area for such imprisonment.

Archaeological evidence establishes the accuracy of the Genesis account.

As Donald J. Wiseman, Professor Emeritus of Assyriology, University of London, says, "It has been my long experience that when the Bible is rightly understood and interpreted it is never contradicted by archaeological and historical evidence when that too has been subjected to strict scrutiny." (Forward to Victor Pearce's book *Evidence For Truth: Archaeology*, 2nd edition, 1998)

Experts in archaeology reject the empty pretenders to knowledge, such as those critics who create sensations in the daily press.

May I suggest to you that the book of Genesis is looking more and more like a treasure chest of enormous value.

Joseph's final tomb

Oh, something else. Two pages back, we saw that at the time of the Exodus, the people of Israel took out Joseph's bones with them.

Later, upon entering the promised land of Canaan (Palestine), his body was buried at Shechem. "*And the bones of Joseph, which the children of Israel brought up out of Egypt, buried they in Shechem, in a parcel of ground which Jacob bought of the sons of Hamor the father of Shechem for an hundred pieces of silver: and it became the inheritance of the children of Joseph.*" (Joshua 24:32)

For centuries there was a tomb at Shechem revered as the tomb of Joseph. A few years ago the tomb was opened. It was found to contain a body mummified according to the Egyptian custom. And in the tomb, among other things, was a sword of the kind worn by Egyptian officials. (John Elder, *Prophets, Idols, and Diggers*. New York:Bobbs Merrill Co., 1960, p.54)

16 A winner time after time

THEY WANTED HIM DEAD!

OBJECTIONS:

1. Genesis erroneously claims that the origin of civilization was in Babylonia. But really it was Egypt.
2. Genesis says that civilizations commenced at a high level. But they really evolved from a primitive start.
3. Genesis says Egypt is not much older than 2000 BC. But it is much older.
4. Genesis is mistaken in stating that camels were known in Egypt as early as 1900 BC.

THE death of Phar Lap - Australia's greatest sporting mystery - has finally been solved, but the people behind it may never be unmasked.

In 2006, *The Daily Telegraph* revealed exclusively that secret scientific tests using breakthrough technology had uncovered evidence that the legendary racehorse was poisoned with arsenic just hours before his 1932 death in the United States.

The startling revelation added credence to the theory Phar Lap was killed on the orders of US gangsters, who feared the Melbourne Cup-winning champion would inflict big losses on their illegal bookmakers.

Scientists used a US synchrotron, or particle accelerator, to unlock the 74-year-old riddle of Phar Lap's mysterious death.

The proof lay in Phar Lap's hair.

A scientific report showed a large dose of arsenic was ingested by Big Red about 35 hours before his agonising death in California on April 5, 1932.

"The arsenic in the hair structure is consistent with a single large dose of arsenic," the report said.

This champion racehorse was the third highest stake-winner in the world. At the height of his powers, bookmakers offered very short odds on him, even refusing to accept any bets on some races. Phar Lap was producing wins so consistently.

It is not surprising that some people wanted him out of the way.

Just as some people at this moment wish very passionately that Genesis didn't exist. Oh, how they hate it! It is a consistent winner. It beats the skeptics, the critics, and atheism, hands down all the time. In fact, never once has it lost a battle.

Would you like to see a few more examples?

Genesis: Babylonia was the origin of civilization (Gen.10:10; 11:2-9)

The book of Genesis pointed to Mesopotamia (Shinar, Babylonia) as the cradle of civilization.

No, said scholars. Egypt was the origin of civilization.

So which was correct?

Well, there is now clear evidence that the *Egyptian culture owed its impulses to Mesopotamia*.

In antiquity, the Mesopotamian plain was a well-watered, fertile region. The spade of the archaeologist reveals that it was densely populated, with a high culture.

In Babylonia, brick was used because of a lack of stone. (see Gen.11:3) However, in Egypt there was no lack of stone. Yet the earliest Egyptians made clay bricks. Egypt's *earliest* monumental buildings were

constructed of brick, as in Mesopotamia's Tigris-Euphrates valley. Why? Because they were clearly influenced by the custom of Babylonia, to which they were used. **Later**, as Babylonia's initial spurt was left behind, we find Egypt's majestic buildings being made of local stone.

In **earliest** Egypt, we find the same architectural features as in Babylonia, such as walls with panelled recesses, as well as similar artistic designs on various utensils.

Among other cultural achievements that Egypt probably received from Mesopotamia were metallurgy, the potter's wheel and the cylinder seal.

The accidental discovery in southern Egypt of the Amarna Letters (official documents received by the Pharaohs Amenhotep III and IV from their vassals and from foreign kings) took scholars by surprise.

An amazed scholarly world learned that the **diplomatic language** of the second millennium BC was **Babylonian**. This was universally used in diplomatic correspondence between the Egyptian king and Asiatic royalties. And this, despite the fact that Egypt had its own national language and each other power had its own language.

This showed the substantial continuing influence of Babylonian culture on the world.

Genesis: a high original civilization

Genesis shows Egypt in a high state of sophistication from the earliest times.

No, said scholars. All civilizations, including Egypt, evolved from a primitive beginning.

So which was correct?

As far as archaeological evidence goes, it can be said that Egypt sprang into existence suddenly, fully developed—that is, without transition from a primitive state, with a fantastic ready-made high society.

Great cities, enormous temples. Pyramids of overwhelming size. Colossal statues with tremendous expressive power. Luxurious tunnels and tombs. Splendid streets flanked by magnificent sculptures. Perfect drainage systems. A decimal system at the very start. A ready-made writing, already perfected. A well-established naming system (in which each Pharaoh had as many as five names). Society already divided into specialist classes. An army, civil service and hierarchy minutely organized. A court exhibiting all the indications of well-defined precedence and form.

Works of art, astonishing in their beauty, have been found to be the relics of the *first*, not the latter, ages, of Egypt.

Philip Groose, in *The Monuments of Ancient Egypt*, sums it up well:

The information derived from the monuments of Egypt is entirely opposed to the imagined progress of art and science. On the contrary, the more remote the antiquity of the records which have been preserved to us, the greater is the skill, the power, the knowledge, and the taste which they reveal. (Philip H. Groose, *The Monuments of Ancient Egypt*, p.291)

In the remotest period of which there are records, Egypt shows a level of civilization which is inexplicable. It sounds crazy I know, but it's a fact!

Yes, it *is* inexplicable, unless Egypt received her heritage basically from somewhere else. Egypt came from a clearly prior-established civilization.

The same can be said for each of the first civilizations – Egypt, Sumeria and the Indus Valley. They appeared suddenly, already fully developed.

In my book *Dead Men's Secrets*, which outlines a thousand secrets of the ancient world, evidence is presented that, not only did a connection exist between them, but that their footprints lead back to Babylonia, thence to the Middle East mountains.

Only one thing can explain their high level of civilization. Those nations got their heritage basically from the world that was wiped out in the Great Flood (the Deluge). They continued where the generation of the biblical Noah left off! Those Flood survivors must have carried sufficient

knowledge of the antediluvian (pre-Flood) era to give a rapid start to the new cultures that sprang up 'out of nowhere' soon after.

What is more, the oldest civilizations appear just long enough after the Deluge for a population density to support a culture.

Genesis: Egypt began shortly before 2000 BC

Another point of contention between Genesis and the critics was the dating.

According to Genesis, Egypt (Mizraim) sprang up after the worldwide Flood, a cataclysm so universally destructive that no nation survived it.

There is good scientific evidence that the Great Flood occurred in the year 2345 BC. After the Flood, the Babel conspiracy can be dated, although a little less precisely, at around 2250 to 2200 BC. And the colonisation of Egypt occurred within this same general period. (See *The Corpse Came Back*, chs.22 and 23. Also *UFO Aliens: The Deadly Secret*, ch.27)

No, said scholars. Egypt began as early as 4000 to 5000 BC.

In 1894, the famed Egyptologist Petrie claimed that the first dynasty of Egypt began in 4777 BC.

Subsequent discovery forced an abandonment of such an early date.

However, in many works dealing with ancient history, statements are found claiming that the year 4241 BC marked the introduction of the Egyptian calendar and the first fixed date in the history of the world.

By 1906, the date 3400 BC was commonly accepted.

In 1950, this date was reduced to 2850 BC.

Additional research by Velikovsky and others slices a further 600 to 800 years off this date.

The significant fact is the great reduction of dates, that brings them steadily nearer to dates derived from the book of Genesis.

Indeed, scholars are being forced to admit that no dates given for the early history of Egypt are established. The first reliable date in Egyptian history, fixed by astronomy, is 1991 BC (at the start of the 12th dynasty).

Yet some writers still play the old record – against mounting evidence – that Egypt is much older.

I guess we could keep on and on. But you get the picture. Genesis continues to win, hands down.

How about just one final example before we close this chapter?

Genesis: Abraham (c. 1900 BC) had camels

Genesis speaks about Abraham's ownership of camels.

No, said the skeptics. The camel was unknown in Egypt in Abraham's time.

Well, not so long ago a tomb was discovered in Egypt, on the walls of which were pictures of various animals that were brought into the country from the very place from which Abraham came. And among them were pictures of... you guessed it!... camels!

A skeptical attitude toward the records of Genesis is today usually a mark of ignorance or semi-knowledge.

Don't you feel sorry for the skeptic?

* * * * *

**For evidence on the historical founding of Egypt, see *Stolen Identity*, chapter 13.
For evidence on the age of the Great Pyramid, see *Stolen Identity*, Appendix C.
For evidence on the age of the Sphinx, see *Stolen Identity*, Appendix B.
(<http://www.beforeus.com/stolen-id.php>)**

17 The ancient Genesis tablets

THE TABLETS “MYSTERY”

OBJECTION: The repetitions in Genesis are because later scribes pieced it together. We call these unknown men J, E, P and D.

A German photographer had an order for some portrait studies of a very beautiful girl. To capture her exquisite colouring, he used orthochromatic plates.

When they were developed and proofs made, the girl's face appeared to be covered with blemishes. The photographer complained to the manufacturer, who took the plates and tested them. But the mysterious blotches were found to be the result of outside causes, and not due to any imperfection in the plates themselves.

The subject did not return to view the proofs until two months after her sitting. When she did appear, the photographer was horrified to see her skin scarred and roughened.

A few questions cleared up the mystery. Two days after she sat for her portrait, the girl had come down with smallpox. The disfiguring marks were not apparent on her face at the time, but the sensitive orthochromatic plates had detected a change in the skin.

The experience led the photographer to make special studies of photographing “invisible” things and in the end he became an expert at detecting forged documents and altered cheques.

You are about to discover some “invisible” (or should I say, some generally unnoticed) “marks” in Genesis which will show the book of Genesis in a new perspective.

These “marks” are not immediately apparent to most people. You might say that, even though we read them with our eyes, yet they remain, as it were, “invisible” to us.

It is only the discoveries of archaeology that have made it possible for us to “see” these “marks” in Genesis. And these features embedded in the narrative are compelling evidence that Genesis is *very, very ancient*.

What the critics claim

We have been hinting that the Hebrew leader Moses compiled the book of Genesis some time before 1400 BC.

But critics continue to point to repetitions in Genesis as proof that many later writers, whom they call J and E and P and D, hashed it together – from oral legends.

Well, if the critic can go into such detail, could it be that he knows something we don’t? After all, there are repetitions, just as he says.

Here is one of them: “*And TERAH lived seventy years, and **BEGAT ABRAM, NAHOR, AND HARAN**. Now these are the generations of Terah. **TERAH BEGAT ABRAM, NAHOR, AND HARAN**.*” (Genesis 11:26,27)

Did you notice that “*Terah begat Abram, Nahor, and Haran*” is written twice?

So do the critics have a point?

Actually, there is some truth on both sides. Those who insist there was *one editor* are correct. Those who say there were *several writers* are likewise correct.

However, there is some vital information that neither side has taken into account.

A repeated expression

As you read through the book of Genesis, you may notice a recurring phrase: “*these are the generations of...*”

- Gen.2:4 – “*These are the generations of the heavens and the earth.*”
- Gen.5:1,2 – “*This is the book of the generations of Adam.*”
- Gen.6:9 – “*These are the generations of Noah.*”
- Gen.10:1 – “*These are the generations of the sons of Noah.*”
- Gen.11:10 – “*These are the generations of Shem.*”
- Gen.11:27 – “*These are the generations of Terah.*”
- Gen.25:12 – “*These are the generations of Ishmael.*”
- Gen.25:19 – “*These are the generations of Isaac.*”
- Gen.36:1 – “*These are the generations of Esau.*”
- Gen.36:9 – “*These are the generations of Esau.*”
- Gen.37:2 – “*These are the generations of Jacob.*”

Buried in the text of Genesis, **this repeated expression** contains a stunning clue, apparently unnoticed, of Genesis’ great age.

You see, what we are staring at here is **a most ancient writing technique**.

Genesis records claim to have been first written, not orally transmitted

Before going further, however, we must dispel the idea that the contents of Genesis were merely handed down orally.

In Gen.5:1 we read: “*This is the **book** of the origins of Adam.*” Here the word *sepher* (translated “*book*”) means “*written account*” or “*finished writing*”. The Septuagint Version renders Gen.2:4: “*This is the **book** of the origins of the heavens and the earth.*”

The “books” of that time were tablets. “Book” simply means “record”. The earliest records of Genesis, therefore, ***claim to have been written down*** – and not, as is often imagined, passed down by word of mouth.



This is not to say that word-perfect oral transmission was impossible. Beyond doubt, brilliant intellects were able to accurately memorise information of such importance. But Genesis itself testifies that these records were transmitted in “book” form. (Gen.5:1)

Something very odd

However, back to this recurring phrase “*These are the generations of...*”

There is something very odd about this that has puzzled scholars. Why? Because in every case, the main **history of the person named** is narrated ***before*** this phrase occurs – NOT after it. For example:

ADAM: * Adam’s story is given in chapters 2 to 4.
 * Then comes “*This is the book of the generations of Adam.*” (Genesis 5:1)
 * Then after the phrase “*This is the book of the generations of Adam,*” we learn **nothing more about Adam**, except his age at death.

So when we read “*this is the book of the history of Adam*” it is the **concluding sentence** of the record already supplied concerning Adam. It is placed AFTER the history of Adam.

Here’s another example:

- JACOB: *
- * Jacob’s story appears in Genesis 25:25 to 37:1.
 - * Then comes “*These are the generations of Jacob.*” (Genesis 37:2)
 - * But after “*These are the generations of Jacob*”, we read mainly about Joseph, **not about Jacob**.

What follows ***does not talk about Jacob*** at all!

The expression “*These are the generations of Jacob*” in Genesis 37:2 obviously has nothing to do with what follows: “**Joseph** *being seventeen years old was feeding the flock with his brethren.*” (v.2)

In each case where the person’s name is given, **the verses that follow DO NOT give the history of that person at all!** And this appears not to make sense.

The mystery

So what does this phrase “*These are the generations of*”, mean? If it is **NOT an introduction**, or a preface to the history of the person named, then whatever is it? That is the mystery!

First use of the phrase “*these are the generations of*” is our guide to its later use

It is often a rule in Scripture that the first use of a word or phrase fixes its future meaning.

So, when we take the phrase, “*these are the generations of*” where it is first used, this **becomes our guide to understanding the same expression** “*these are the generations of*” when we see it repeated through the book of Genesis.

Here is its first use: “*These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created*” (Genesis 2:4). Again, you will notice that it is **not** placed before, but AFTER the history of Creation already given in Genesis chapter 1. So **this phrase is the concluding sentence** of the record already written.

This means it is the **end-title** for what has gone before.

Other books of Moses show this same feature:

- The book of Leviticus has a simple opening, but the book’s **conclusion** is, “*These are the commandments which the Lord commanded Moses for the children of Israel in Mount Sinai.*”
- In the book of Numbers the **last sentence** reads: “*These are the commandments and judgments which the Lord commanded by the hand of Moses unto the children of Israel in the plains of Moab by Jordan near Jericho.*”

Now to the book of Genesis. It keeps repeating the phrase “*These are the generations*”.

What does this word “generations” mean? The Hebrew word for “generations” is *toledoth*. This means “**history**”, especially family history. And also **the origin** of anything, the story of their origin. For example, in Gen.2:4, “*these are the generations of the heavens and the earth*” means this is the story of their **origin**. (*Gesenius’ Hebrew Lexicon*)

So, put simply, the use of *toledoth* (generations) means “**this is the history**”, “**these are the historical origins of...**”, “**these are beginnings of...**” - signifying family history IN ITS ORIGINS.

It turns out that **such end-titles were common practice in ancient times**. We might cite, as an example, the Code of Hammurabi, an Eastern king who was contemporary with Terah and Abraham. Here the conclusion is more lengthy and formal than the introduction. It is **at the end of** his great inscription that he speaks of having written it. He says, “*The righteous laws which Hammurabi the wise king established... my weighty words have been written upon my monument.*”

Title placed at the end

In those very ancient times the prevailing literary method of writing was to provide little or nothing of a preface, but frequently **a very formal conclusion**. So a *title phrase*, known as ‘colophon’, tended to be placed *at the end* of each tablet, or series of tablets.

Today, we place the title at the beginning of a book, but in very ancient times they placed it at the end. The title was the **concluding sentence** – and **pointed back to the report just given**.

So when we read “*these are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created*” (Gen.2:4), it is the concluding sentence of the record already written. It is placed AFTER the history of Creation. It ENDS the section of history about **Creation**. Immediately after that COMMENCES another section.

Likewise, “*These are the generations of Adam*” ENDS the section of history about **Adam**. And immediately after that COMMENCES another section about something else.

“*These are the generations of Jacob*” ENDS the section of history about **Jacob**. And immediately after that, “*Joseph being seventeen years old,*” etc., COMMENCES another section.

Repetitions are links

And that brings us to another very ancient writing technique that shows Genesis to have been written originally on clay tablets. Immediately following the phrase “*These are the generations of*”, there comes a repetition. And repetitions were used to join the tablets.

Notice this example:

- (a) Firstly, in Genesis 10:22-25 the children of Shem are listed:
“The children of Shem; Elam, and Asshur, and Arphaxad, and Lud, and Aram. And the children of Aram; Uz, and Hul, and Gether, and Mash. And Arphaxad begat Salah; and Salah begat Eber. And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg.”

(b) Then in Genesis 11:10 appears this phrase: *“These are the generations of Shem.”*

(c) Then in Genesis 11:10-16 the children of Shem are listed again:

“Shem was an hundred years old, and begat Arphaxad two years after the flood: And Shem lived after he begat Arphaxad five hundred years, and begat sons and daughters. And Arphaxad lived five and thirty years, and begat Salah: And Arphaxad lived after he begat Salah four hundred and three years, and begat sons and daughters. And Salah lived thirty years, and begat Eber: And Salah lived after he begat Eber four hundred and three years, and begat sons and daughters. And Eber lived four and thirty years, and begat Peleg.”

In the above sequence,

- (a) The descendants of Shem who were born during his lifetime are named.
- (b) Then comes the end-title: *“These are the generations of Shem.”* This ends Shem’s tablet.
- (c) Then the next tablet begins. And it repeats the end part of the previous tablet (Shem’s tablet) to show that it is the tablet to be read **next** after Shem’s tablet.

Repetitions, you see, were used to link tablets together.

When the lengthy nature of the writing required more than one tablet (just as today with the pages of letters or books), proper sequence was often achieved by the use of **titles and catch-lines**.

At the **start** of the next tablet were written **the last few lines of the previous tablet**.

This very ancient writing technique is precisely what we find in the book of Genesis. Sometimes we find these strange **duplications**, when we see a reference to *“generations”* in the book of Genesis.

Here is another one:

*“And TERAH lived seventy years, and **BEGAT ABRAM, NAHOR, AND HARAN**. Now these are the generations of Terah. **TERAH BEGAT ABRAM, NAHOR, AND HARAN.**”* (Genesis 11:26,27)

So the end of one tablet reads as: “*And **TERAH** lived seventy years, and **BEGAT ABRAM, NAHOR, AND HARAN**. Now these are the generations of Terah.*”

And the start of the next tablet says: “***TERAH BEGAT ABRAM, NAHOR, AND HARAN.***”

This links two tablets, one to follow the other.

The **repetition** of the names “*Abram, Nahor and Haran*”, before and after the “*generations*” phrase, indicates that they are “**catch-lines**” and conform to the usual ancient practice. On the first tablet, after the last line, came the first words of the next tablet.

If the critic knew his subject better, he would realise that this charge of “repetition” could be brought against almost every piece of ancient writing. It is characteristic of the style of the time.

Hence Professor Arno Poebel, in commenting on some ancient Sumerian tablets found at Nippur, writes: “...the readers of the Bible, moreover, will recognise the quaint principle of partial repetition or paraphrase.” (Poebel, *Historical Texts*. University of Pennsylvania, 1914)

We find that, except for the last part of Genesis (Joseph’s story in Egypt), every tablet or series of tablets **begins with a repetition of facts** contained in the previous tablet. This is precisely what anyone acquainted with the ancient methods of writing would expect. And it is **further evidence** of the faithfulness with which the records have been transmitted to us.

The literary methods evident in Genesis are those of the time of Moses and not of a later date when methods changed. (See experts of recognised international standing, such as Kenneth Kitchen, Professor of Archaeology and Oriental Studies; Dr D. Wiseman, Professor of Assyriology and a Semitist; Professor Alan Millard.)

By clutching at these repetitions in Genesis in his attempt to discredit it, the poor critic only shows up his own ignorance. Oh, one does feel so sorry for him!

Let’s say it again. Repetitions were deliberate features, inserted to link two tablets.

What we have discovered about “*generations of...*”

1. The phrase “*These are the generations of...*” is the end-piece of a document – and **points back** to the narrative already recorded.
2. It is in the style of the earliest written records.

And in the next chapter we shall discover something else quite wonderful about this phrase “*These are the generations of...*”

3. It habitually indicates the writer or owner of the history.

18 It's in the title

WHO WROTE EACH TABLET?

Yes, you can know the name of each person who actually wrote - or owned - the tablets which now comprise Genesis.

Here's how: Each time you read the words "*These are the generations [origins] of...*", just see whose name is on the end!

The name at the end of this phrase "*These are the generations [origins] of...*" refers to the owner or writer of the tablet. In other words, "*These are the origins of Noah*" does **not of necessity** mean "This is the history **about** Noah, **but** rather this is the history **written or possessed by** Noah.

As any reader will soon discover, Abraham is one of the most prominent characters in the Genesis histories. His story is fully written.

Yet nowhere do we read the expression "*these are the generations of Abraham.*" But the record continues into the lives of his sons, then ends with the words, "*These are the generations of Ishmael... of Isaac.*" (Genesis 25:12,19)

And why? Because that expression "*generations of [history of]*" does not have to do with Abraham's life, but rather with who wrote the information. You see, the tablets containing the Abraham information were not written or owned by Abraham, but, we are told, by his sons Isaac and Ishmael. (Gen.25:12,19)

These repetitions of "*These are the generations [origins] of...*" are the **links** between the different volumes Moses assembled together into one new book, **Genesis**, which means "**At the Beginning (of Things)**".

The sources of information available to Moses when he compiled them into one book, are thus named.

The natural sections of Genesis

These tablets were preserved in the form that family records were normally handed down.

Then, some time between 1486 and 1406 BC, Moses compiled them, basically unaltered, into one book – Genesis.

Tablet series	Contents	
1	Gen.1:1 to 2:4	– “ <i>This is the book of the generations (origins) of the heavens and the earth.</i> ”
2	Gen.2:5 to 5:2	– “ <i>This is the book of the generations (origins) of Adam.</i> ”
3	Gen.5:3 to 6:9a	– “ <i>These are the generations (origins, or histories) of Noah.</i> ”
4	Gen.6:9b to 10:1	- “ <i>These are the origins (histories) of the sons of Noah.</i> ”
5	Gen.10:2 to 11:10a	- “ <i>These are the origins (histories) of Shem.</i> ”
6	Gen11:10b to 11:27a	- “ <i>These are the origins (histories) of Terah.</i> ”
7 & 8	Gen.11:27b to 25:19a	- “ <i>These are the origins (histories) of Ishmael. and Isaac.</i> ”
9-11	Gen.25:19b to 37:2a	- “ <i>These are the origins (histories) of Esau and Jacob.</i> ”

Tablet closes just before the death of the person named

It is most significant that:

- In no instance is an event recorded which the person named could not have written *from his own intimate knowledge, or from reliable contemporary information.*
- The history recorded in **each section ceases before the death of the person named** – and sometimes it is continued almost up to the date of his death.

Let’s look at some examples of this.

Tablet Series 4 (Gen.6:9 to 10:1)

This tablet series ends with the statement: “*These are the generations [origins; family histories] of the sons of Noah.*”

It is almost wholly taken up with the account of **the Flood**. And it appears to be three reports of the Flood blended together.

Gen.7:18 – “*And the waters prevailed, and were increased greatly upon the earth.*”

verse 19 – “*And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth.*”

verse 20 – “*Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail.*”

Also:

verse 21 – “*And all flesh died that moved upon the face of the earth.*”

verse 22 – “*All in whose nostrils was the breath of life and all that was in the dry land died.*”

verse 23 – “*And every living substance was destroyed.*”

Now the critic says with a show of triumph that he has discovered a flaw in Genesis – what he calls the clumsy repetitions. These, he says, prove that *several unknown later writers* were involved.

I agree... at least about several writers.

“You agree?” asks the critic in surprise.

Yes, this section had several writers.

“So there!” says the critic with some smugness.

And yes, one must agree that such repetitions do suggest more than one person is connected with the writing of the report.

“Ah, ha!” says the critic. “Then Genesis is an unreliable concoction by unknown writers!”

Now stop right there! That **more than one person** helped write the report is not news. Because we are already told this very same thing by the tablet itself.

And the persons who wrote the report are actually named!

“What do you mean?”

Simply this: The record ends by telling us that this is the history of **the three sons of Noah** – Ham, Shem and Japheth. “*These are the origins (histories) of the sons of Noah.*” (Gen.10:1) It is telling us that they owned, or wrote this account.

Each of these three survivors gave his own testimony of the event. These three brothers were eyewitnesses. And how must we regard eyewitness testimony? Well, we’ve already dealt with that.

So there’s no need to go looking for unknown writers who lived long, long after the event. The critic has no excuse to make that claim any more.

Not a clumsy combining of reports

But I would like you to notice something else that the critic has missed. It is the well organized arrangement of this report by Ham, Shem and Japheth, as they describe the natural progression of the rising Flood.

*Stage 1: And **they that went in**, went in male and female of all flesh, as God had commanded him: and the LORD shut him in. (Gen.7:16)*

*Stage 2: And the flood was forty days upon the earth; and the **waters increased**, and bare up **the ark**, and it was **lift up above the earth.** (v.17)*

*Stage 3: And the waters prevailed, and were **increased greatly** upon the earth; and **the ark went upon the face of the waters.** (v.18)*

*Stage 4: And the waters **prevailed exceedingly** upon the earth; and all the **high hills**, that were under the whole heaven, **were covered.** (v.19)*

*Stage 5: Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the **mountains were covered.**(v.20)*

Stage 1 – They enter into the survival vessel.

Stage 2 – As the “waters *increase*”, the Ark, which was resting on the land, begins to be lifted up *off the ground (above the earth)*.

Stage 3 – As the waters “increase *greatly*”, the Ark now floats higher, *on the waters*.

Stage 4 – As the waters “prevail *exceedingly*” the high *hills* are then covered.

Stage 5 – As the waters go still further “*upward*”, the *mountains* are next covered.

Notice: the waters *increased*... then *increased greatly*... then *prevailed exceedingly*...

Notice also: lift up *above the earth* (Ark lifted off the ground)... went *upon the face of the waters*... all the *high hills* were covered... the *mountains* were covered.

This is a very orderly description of the progressively rising waters. There is nothing disjointed about it. Even if three eyewitnesses were involved in the report, it flows so smoothly that it might just as easily have been written by one person.

And something else. Were you aware that the stages of the Flood are chronicled with dates? (Gen.7:4,11,17,24; 8:3-6,10,12-14)

SUMMARY OF ARK’S LOG BOOK

		Month	Day
Day 1	The Flood begins	2	17
		3	1
Day 40	Maximum water height reached	3	27
		4	1
		5	1
		6	1
		7	1
Day 150	Abatement of water begins	7	17
		8	1
		9	1
Day 224	First land seen	10	1
		11	1
Day 264	Raven sent out	11	11
Day 271	Dove sent out	11	18
Day 278	Dove sent out: olive leaf	11	25
Day 285	Dove sent out: no return	12	2

Day 314	On dry ground	1	1
		2	1
Day 370	Leave the Ark	2	27

Add 7 days at the beginning, during which they embarked. Just 377 days after they entered the survival vessel, the Noah family stepped out. The Flood waters had covered the earth for just over a year.

The record reads like a ship's log. You could call it "*Noah's sons' diary*".

Tablet Series 5 (Gen.10:2 to 11:10a)

Now, this is where we answer the earlier question:

WHO WROTE THE TABLE OF NATIONS?

Genesis chapter 10 claims to be a list of all the nations – as well as giving the direct descent of each from their Flood-surviving ancestors. "*These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood.*" (Genesis 10:32)

However, we found earlier that when you examine the Table of Nations of Genesis 10, the family tree of the Hebrews ends abruptly after only five generations:

Shem... Arphaxad... Salah... Eber... Peleg. Then it stops short. No more names.

Later, in Genesis chapter 11, the chronology is given again, but this time it goes further:

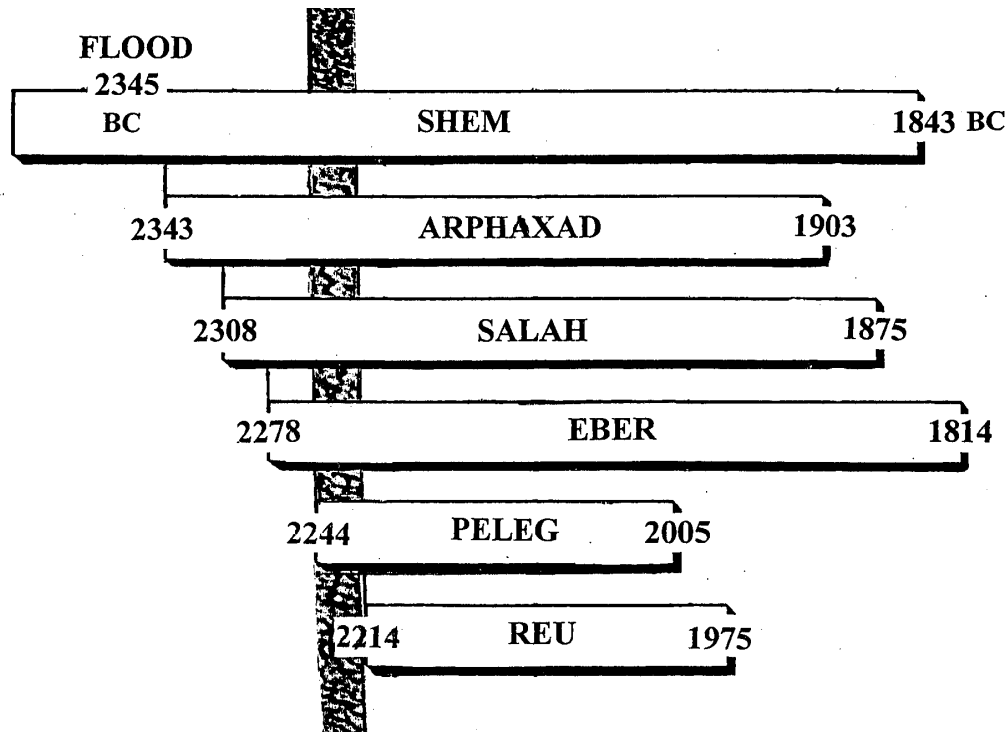
Shem... Arphaxad... Salah... Eber... Peleg... Reu... Serug... Nahor... Terah... Abram (Abraham)

QUESTION: Why does the Table of Nations in Genesis 10 stop short?

ANSWER: At the time it was written, that was as far as post-Flood history had gone. It was evidently chronicled before Peleg's son Reu was born.

It was written within the 30-year period between Peleg's birth in 2244 and the birth of his son Reu in 2214 BC.

In the chart, repeated again here, the dark vertical line marks that 30-year period of time in which Genesis 10 must have been written.



We earlier suggested that you could know the name of the man who wrote this Table of Nations.

Well now we come to Genesis 11:10 and it tells us that “*These are the generations [histories] of Shem.*” As you see from the chart, Shem was alive at this time.

So, who was the writer? **Shem, of course!**

Tablet Series 5 (which comprises Genesis 10:2 to 11:10) is **written, or owned, by Shem.**

- Shem describes how, from himself and his two brothers, the family grew over five generations into clans or tribes.

- This tablet contains the famous Table of Nations of Genesis chapter 10. It also includes a brief statement concerning the powerful rebel Nimrod. There is an account of the building of the Tower of Babel and the scattering of the peoples. It is signed off by Shem: “*These are the generations of Shem.*” That is, “***These are the histories [written by] Shem.***” It was, evidently, recorded by Shem. This tablet is an outline of developments during the five generations after the Flood.
- Chronology figures show us that **Shem outlived that last generation recorded in this tablet** – the sons of Joktan.

On this same tablet (that is, in Genesis 10:19) we read: “*and the border of the Canaanite was from Zidon as thou goest towards Gerar unto Gaza; as thou goest towards Sodom and Gomorrah.*”

This sentence arrests attention, because it is written in *present tense*. At the time this was written **Sodom and Gomorrah were still standing**. We know this from the following chronology provided within the book of Genesis itself:

- * 352 years from the end of the Great Flood in 2344 BC to the *birth of Abraham* in 1992 BC. (Compare carefully Gen.11:10-26,32 ; 12:4 ; Acts 1:4)
- * 99 years from the birth of Abraham in 1992 BC to the ***destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah in 1893 BC.*** (Gen.17:21-25)
- * 502 years from the end of the Great Flood in 2344 BC to the ***death of Shem in 1842 BC.*** (See Gen.11:10,11)

BC 2344	BC 2244-2214	BC 1992	BC 1893	BC 1842
Great Flood ends	Shem's tablet written	Abraham born	Sodom and Gomorrah destroyed	Shem dies

This chart shows us that Shem wrote his history before the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah – hence his use of the present tense, “*as thou goest towards Sodom and Gomorrah.*” (Gen.10:19)

Tablet Series 6 (Gen.11:10b to 11:27a)

Tablet 6 is **written, or owned, by Terah** (Gen.11:10-27).

- Terah’s genealogical list registers the death of his father Nahor, and records the birth of his son Abram (Abraham).
- Had Terah lived another 11 years he would have been able to record the birth of Ishmael, and if he had lived another 25 years he could have added, “And Abraham begat Isaac.” But **the tablet does not include these. It ends immediately before Terah’s own death.**

Tablet Series 7 and 8 (Gen.11:27 to 25:19)

This includes all we know of the life of Abraham. The whole story shows **an intimate familiarity with details**. For instance, the visit of the three men to his tent. Notice the incidental detail:

“...as he sat in the tent door in the heat of the day, and he lift up his eyes and looked, and lo, three men stood over against him; and when he saw them he ran to meet them from the tent door, and bowed himself to the earth and said... and he hastened into the tent unto Sarah, and said, Make ready quickly three measures of fine meal... and he stood by them under the trees, and they did eat.” (Genesis chapter 18).

The report contains an intimate personal account of Abraham’s very earnest, emotional plea to spare Sodom. After its overthrow, even more personal details follow. The style is just what you would expect of Abraham, if he were relating the incidents to his son Isaac - who is, in fact, stated to have owned the tablets recording them. “*These are the generations [histories] of Isaac.*” (Gen.25:19)

One is struck by this verse:

And the field of Ephron, which was in Machpelah, which was before Mamre, the field, and the cave which was therein, and all the trees in the field, that were in all the borders round about, were made sure. (Gen.23:17)

Does that have a legal ring to it? Does it sound as though it might be a verbatim extract of the precise wording on a legal tablet such as was used in the days of Abraham?

This series of tablets 7 and 8, is **written, or owned, by** the two brothers **Ishmael and Isaac** (Gen.11:27 to 25:19).

- The events narrated indicate that the history recorded on these tablets **ceases just before the death of Isaac**. We know Isaac was the last writer, since Isaac survived Ishmael by 57 years and records Ishmael's death.

Tablet Series 9 to 11 (Gen.25:20 to 37:2)

These tablets 9 to 11 **belong to, or are written by, Esau and Jacob** (Gen.25:19 to 37:2).

- Immediately before the end phrase "*these are the origins of Jacob*", we read, "*and Jacob dwelt in the land wherein his father was a stranger, in the land of Canaan.*"
- This last sentence seems unconnected to the context. But it is evidence of the **date** when and where the tablets were written. Later, Jacob had moved down to Egypt. This sentence **indicates where he was living when he closed his written record**.

It was an ancient custom to impress **a date** on a document. After the tablet had been written and the name of the scribe added, dates were inscribed in a simple manner. It was not until some centuries later that the practice was developed of dating tablets with the year of the reigning king.

The earliest dating was done in the following way: "*The year in which the throne of Nabu was made*" or "*Year Sumu-el the king built the wall of Sippar*" or "*Year of the canal Tutu-hengal*" (presumably the year the canal was cut).

- Likewise with Jacob, in the book of Genesis: “*And Jacob dwelt in the land wherein his father was a stranger, in the land of Canaan. These are the generations of Jacob.*” (Genesis 37:1,2). This sentence **indicates where he was living when he closed his record.**
- Thus he tells us of the death of his father Isaac, but he says nothing whatever about the sale of his son Joseph into slavery, which occurred 11 years before Isaac’s death. Neither does he mention any of the other events in Egypt connected with Joseph. Until Jacob went down to Egypt (ten years after he buried Isaac in Canaan), he could know nothing of these matters concerning Joseph.

Order of events:

1. Joseph sold into slavery – NOT mentioned in Jacob’s record
 2. Joseph in Egypt - NOT mentioned in Jacob’s record
 3. Eleven years later Isaac dies - This IS mentioned
 4. Jacob writes his tablet
 5. Jacob goes to Egypt and learns about Joseph
- Thus the record of Jacob closes in Canaan. This sentence “*and Jacob dwelt in the land wherein his father was a stranger, in the land of Canaan*” (Genesis 37:1) indicates not only that Jacob wrote the tablets, but **when and where** they were written.

Dated by the writer’s dwelling place at that time

Here are some other examples where the Genesis tablets are **dated** by indicating the address of the writer at the time he wrote his document. And these dates are immediately connected with the ending phrase, “*these are the generations of...*” Notice:

- “*And Isaac dwelt by Beer-lahai-roi. Now these are the generations of Ishmael.*” Gen.25:11,12
- “*Thus dwelt Esau in mount Seir... And these are the generations of Esau.*” – Gen.36:8,9

- “*And Terah **lived seventy years**, and begat Abram, Nahor, and Haran. Now **these are the generations [origins] of Terah**. Terah begat Abram, Nahor and Haran.*” – Gen.11:26,27

This last colophon (end-title) was not trying to say that all of Terah’s sons were born at the same time when Terah was 70 years old. Not at all - because Abram was not born until 60 years later than that (Acts 7:4; Gen.12:4). But, in conformity with the prevailing practice of the times, ***Terah was dating his tablet***, stating that it was written when Terah was 70 years old.

Each of these tablets contains **only that which the person named** at the end of them **could have written from personal knowledge**.

Tablet Series 2 (Gen.2:5 to 5:2)

Tablet Series 2 **claims ownership by Adam** (Gen.2:5 to 5:2). And this is what it contains:

- The beginning of man upon the earth
- The Garden of Eden
- The Fall
- The murder of Abel.

This tablet also bears the **clearest marks of extreme antiquity and simplicity**, which **could never have come from a late hand**.

For example, there is the remark of Lamech, “*I have slain a young man to my wounding and a young man to my hurt*,” which points to contemporary archaic events of which no explanation is given.

Such an incongruous statement would mean nothing to anyone – except to those living at the time of the event. It is unthinkable that any later writer would have included this meaningless speech, without explanation. Rather, it makes sense only if **recorded by someone alive at the time of the events**, whose readers knew what he was talking about.

- The list of Cain’s descendants ends abruptly with Jabel, “*the father of such as dwell in tents and have cattle*”; Jubal, “*the father of all such as handle the harp and organ*”; and Tubal-cain,

the “*instructor of every artificer in brass and iron*”. (Gen.4:20-22)

- These men were the 8th generation from Adam (Gen.4:1,17-22). And if you compare the chronology given in Genesis 5 you will discover that this 8th generation lived **before Adam’s death**.

CRITICS CLAIM: In Genesis chapter 1 and Genesis chapter 2 are two different Creation accounts, which appear contradictory. Therefore, there must have been two different scribes (probably much, much later, say in the 6th century BC).

IN REALITY: Enough evidence has now been presented to show that these tablets are NOT the work of various priestly scribes of the 6th century BC, but of men who *experienced* or were given *a first hand report* concerning the events narrated.

A careful comparison of Genesis chapters 1 and 2 suggests no more than a difference of emphasis:

- * Genesis **chapter 1** (which is part of Tablet 1) is **the actual order** in which creation took place.
- * **Chapter 2** (which is part of Tablet 2) constitutes the record of **only the most significant events** which took place.

Both were recorded by Adam.

Tablet Series 1 (Gen.1:1 to 2:4)

Obviously, no man could have personally witnessed the creation events recorded on this first tablet. And you may notice that it is the **only** tablet that does not state the name of the writer. It simply says, “*These are the generations of the heaven and of the earth.*”

These events had to be revealed to him. And they are recorded on Tablet 1. There are statements in Tablet 2 which inform us that **the Glorious Being who revealed Himself to be the Creator was directly communicating with our first parents** (Gen.2:16 ; 3:8-17).

God, the eyewitness to His own creative act, described the event to them. You can believe the first chapter in the Bible because its contents came to

Adam direct from God Himself. *“Thy Word is true from the beginning,”* says the psalmist. (Psa.119:160)

In Tablet 1, the wording is simple, but the truth conveyed is profound. It is ***God teaching Adam*** in a simple, yet faultless, way, how the earth and the things he could see on and around it, had been created. Adam’s Creator talked with him in the garden. Adam says so. (Gen.2:16; 3:8)

CONTAINS ONLY WHAT ADAM HEARD

It seems safe to conclude, then, that this first section of Genesis is **the world’s most ancient piece of writing**. It is a record of what God told Adam. It is ***not an impersonal*** general account. It is God teaching the first man the elemental things about the universe. It records the words that God used in telling Adam the story of Creation.

Notice the method employed in writing it down: “And God ***said***... And God ***called***.”

What God called the components of the universe is placed on record. *“And God **called** the light day and the darkness he **called** night..” “And God **called** the firmament heaven: and God **called** the dry land earth and the gathering together of waters **called** he seas.”*

It is written on a very personal note. It is direct speech, *“And God **said**, Behold I have given you every herb yielding seed which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree in which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed to you, and it shall be for meat.”* (Gen.1:29) These words were spoken to the first man. **It is not a vague and general account.**

It is written in the style of someone recording precisely **what Adam heard** when the narrative was told to him.

It contains no reference to any event subsequent to the creation of the first man and woman and what God said to them.

You can picture the scene – Adam gathering his offspring and telling them, “There you are, children. That’s what God said to me about His creation of everything.” And eventually Adam placed it on permanent record, to be handed down to future generations. It was not written on pages, as we do now, but carefully incised onto clay tablets. Hence the record tended to be very concise. That is Tablet No. 1. (Genesis 1:1 to 2:4)

Then, later in life, Adam realises that he should preserve the knowledge of events that have happened since. So he records that on Tablet No. 2. (Genesis 2:5 to 5:2)

So now, instead of just one Adam tablet, there are two.

As time advances and the world is about to be destroyed by the Great Flood, Noah takes these two tablets on board the survival vessel. And tablets are enduring things. Unlike paper books, they last.

Then, later in life, Noah will place on permanent record the information of his family lineage from Adam, the tragedy of evil that has taken over the world, and God's stated purpose to intervene. That becomes Tablet No. 3. (Genesis 5:3 to 6:9a)

To record the events of the Great Flood will be left to Noah's sons. Tablet No. 4. (Genesis 6:9b to 10:1)

World's oldest records

Thus we have a record physically possessed by Noah (Gen.6:9), and records possessed even earlier by Adam, the very first man! (Gen.2:4; 5:1) Both Adam and Noah were living eyewitnesses of events they recorded!

This being so, these passages in the book of Genesis must constitute ***the oldest documents in the world!*** Can there be anything older than the first man? When Moses compiled Genesis, he had access to a series of original volumes, going back to the first centuries of mankind.

And that brings us to some other features that testify to its great age...

19 Why it is the oldest

THE WORLD'S OLDEST PIECE OF WRITING

It was school vacation time. And my parents decided that this year, instead of camping out in the family tent, that we would accept an old gold miner's invitation to "house sit" for him, for a few days.

Well, what an adventure that turned out to be! The "house" was no more than a one-room shack perched on the bank of a tree-lined river, the Waiomu Stream.

However, what wowed me was the inside of the cottage. It was plastered with wallpaper. But not your every-day wallpaper. The whole area of wall was stuck around with old newspapers. I mean, very old. So old that this thirteen year old boy was totally enthralled! Excitedly I read the dates... 1896... 1893... 1889!

And I won't even try to describe the quaint news items. It was an antiquarian's paradise. Yes, they were the oldest – the very oldest of oldest – newspapers that I had ever seen!

But they were nothing compared to the world's very oldest piece of writing!

We have discovered that Genesis was first engraved on tablets. And two of these were possessed by the first man who ever lived on this planet – Adam himself!

We shall now zoom in closer on these two tablets... and discover some features that indicate these as so old, nothing can be older. Are you ready?

1. IN THE MOST ANCIENT STYLE

This first feature applies not just to the first two tablets alone, but to all of Genesis. With its end-titles (colophons) and catch-lines, it is formatted in the style of the most ancient tablets on earth. In very ancient times the prevailing literary method of writing was to provide little or nothing of a preface, but frequently **a very formal conclusion**.

A ***title*** phrase, known as ‘colophon’, tended to be placed ***at the end*** of each tablet, or series of tablets.

In the most ancient tablets, proper sequence was often achieved by the use of **catch-lines**. At the **end** of each tablet were written **the first few lines of the next tablet**.

These features are precisely what we find in Genesis. They are evidence of its great age.

While this is true of the book of Genesis as a whole, the features that follow apply particularly to Adam’s first tablet.

2. BEFORE MYTH AROSE

The first chapter of Genesis is **so ancient that** it does not contain mythical or legendary matter. Such elements are entirely absent. It bears the markings of having been written **before myth and legend had time to grow** (and not, as critics assert, at some later time when it had to be stripped of the mythical and legendary elements found in all other surviving accounts of Creation).

Certainly Genesis is not founded upon some previously existing myth. All you need to do is to realise its unique features and to compare it with any other versions, such as the Sumerian/Babylonian myths.

3. BEFORE PHILOSOPHY DEVELOPED

The simple account of Tablet 1 is **so original that** it does **not** bear a trace of any system of **philosophy**. Yet it is so profound that it is capable of correcting philosophical systems.

4. **BEFORE THERE WERE ANY NATIONS: UNIVERSAL IN CHARACTER**

It is also **so ancient that** it contains **nothing** that is merely **nationalistic**. Neither Babylonian, Egyptian, nor Jewish modes of thought find a place in it – because it was *written before clans, or nations, or philosophies originated*.

All its references are universal in their application and scope. For example, no mention is made of any particular tribe or country or customs.

It contains the features of what must be regarded as THE ORIGINAL, of which the other accounts we have are merely corrupted copies. Other accounts incorporate their national philosophies in crude polytheistic and mythological form. **This is pure**. Genesis chapter 1 is *as primitive as man himself*.

5. **BEFORE THE SUN AND MOON HAD NAMES**

Again, here is the beginning of written history. In fact, it may have been **written even before the sun and moon had been given names**. Here is a type of rare simplicity: “*Let there be **lights** in the firmament... and God made two **great lights**, the **greater light** to rule the day and the **lesser light** to rule the night.*” (Gen.1:14-16)

Of course, long before the time of Moses the sun and the moon had been given names. The sun was known as “*shemesh*”. Names for the sun and moon are among the oldest words known in any language. Yet this document was written BEFORE names had been given to the “*greater and lesser lights*”.

6. **BEFORE THE SEVENTH DAY HAD A NAME**

Something else. The “Sabbath” is never referred to. It is simply called the **seventh day**. This is clear evidence that the narrative was written BEFORE *the word Sabbath* had been introduced, or at least before it became a common name in the vocabulary of the people to describe the seventh day’s rest.

The omission of this all-important word is **clear evidence against the theory** that some time later a Jewish writer set himself the task of intertwining the idea of six days' work and a Sabbath rest into the Genesis story, yet avoiding even mentioning the all-important word Sabbath.

All the above details show that this first page of the Bible is **very ancient indeed**.

Remarkable purity of the text - preserved without changes

I would like to share with you three features which demonstrate the absolute integrity of Genesis.

1. LITERARY AIDS USED BY THE ORIGINAL WRITERS ARE STILL EMBEDDED IN THE TEXT

We have already noted that the earliest tablets employed certain literary aids:

- Each series of tablets was **assigned a "title"**.
- Many tablets **ended with** the title (colophon).
- **"Catch-lines"** ensured that tablets were read in their proper order.
- The **name of the scribe** who wrote the tablet, is given.
- The **date** when it was written (usually identified by a known event) is recorded.

In Genesis, there are clear indications of the use of some of these methods. That the book of Genesis was **compiled** at an early date, certainly **not later than the time of Moses** (15th century BC) is indicated by the presence of these literary aids.

It is remarkable confirmation of the purity with which the text has been transmitted to us, that we find these literary aids **still embedded** in this ancient document. It is like finding an original painting with the artist's pre-sketched pencil mark guides still showing through.

That such ancient literary aids and cuneiform usages are still discernable in the book of Genesis – unremoved - **indicates the purity of the text and the care with which it has been handed down to us, unaltered.**

These features also show that these records were first written on clay tablets. And also that these tablets formed a series **joined together in the same sequence as we have them today.**

This internal evidence disproves the critics' claim that Genesis was composed, or edited, at a much later date from various unrelated sources.

These literary aids still embedded in the text are physical evidence that would stand up in any court investigation.

Again, may we remember Aristotle's Dictum:

The benefit of the doubt is to be given to the document itself, not arrogated by the critic to himself.

2. MOSES, AS COMPILER, RETAINED THE ORIGINAL SCRIPT AND ADDED EXPLANATORY NOTES

Concerning the “notes” and “explanations” added into the text (see pages 123 and 124 of this present work for examples), it appears certain that they were **edited in** by Moses **when the Hebrews were almost ready to enter the Promised Land.**

Here is another example. Genesis 33:18 informs us that “*Jacob came to Shalem, a city of Shechem, which is in the land of Canaan.*” Shalem (Salem) was Jerusalem's earlier name. This passage was obviously written when the name Shalem was in use, rather than Jerusalem. And you notice that in that early time it was an insignificant place, inferior to Shechem, which needed to be further explained as in the land of Canaan.

To labour at giving such a detailed explanation would be quite unnecessary – even ludicrous - after Jerusalem became a well-known capital city, whose location was well known to all. This is another evidence of the antiquity of this passage.

With these inspired tablets before him, tablets written from the earliest days, Moses is compiling his book. Most reverently does he handle these

tablets. The first thing that impresses us as we read them now, is that **he regards the old wording as so sacred that usually he avoids making unnecessary alterations to the text, even to modernise words.** He leaves the original ancient expressions and place names just as he finds them, though they are no longer in current use.

In order that they may be understood by his people – a new generation just entering the land – he explains the ancient records by adding the contemporary place names alongside the ancient names, and sometimes he states that the name is retained “*to this day.*”

3. NO ATTEMPT TO ALTER THE REPETITIONS

It is evident that **Moses held these tablets in such high esteem that he made no attempt whatever to avoid the repetitions,** or to combine genealogies. Thus the genealogies of Shem are found in both Gen.10:22-29 and 11:10-18. Also, the reference to the corrupt state of the earth, and the declaration regarding its destruction, as found in Gen.6:5-7 and 6:11-013, are left duplicated.

Reliable

All of this is evidence that what we read today in the book of Genesis is uncorrupted, unchanged, and pure, just as it was first written. You can be sure that you have in your hands a document as reliable as the autographed original.

20 Genesis changed since Moses' time?

DOCUMENT CHANGE FORBIDDEN

OBJECTION: The manuscripts have been interfered with so many times since Moses' day, you can never know what was there originally.

Corey leaned back and stretched his feet along the couch. "Now, now, now," he smiled, "you can't be sure what's true in the book of Genesis. It's been interfered with."

"And why would anyone do that?"

"Oh, to make the heroes in the stories look good. Or to place their own race in a favourable light."

"So?" asked his friend Jason. "You have my attention. Tell me, what was changed – and when?"

"It was done after Moses died."

"You have evidence of that?"

"Well, I was reading this new book recently."

"Oh, do you mind if I see that?"

"Sure." Corey eased himself off the couch and slipped out of the room. In a minute or two he was back. "Here."

For a few minutes there was silence, as Jason pored carefully through the book. Presently, he spoke. “Corey, can you show me where the writer actually says that?”

Reaching out, Corey took back the book. “I was reading it this morning.” He turned some pages, then looked up with a smile. “Ah, here it is.” He passed it back.

Jason scanned the page. “Yes, it does say that some priests made changes after the death of Moses’ brother Aaron. Okay... let’s look at some evidence...” Jason continued reading in silence.

Corey looked on. “Well?”

“Yes, this writer does say as you told me. But...” Then Jason straightened up. “Corey, I can’t find his evidence. Where is it?”

Corey stammered. “W-well...”

“Tell me this,” said Jason, “if I want to learn about something that happened before the first century why would I believe this Johnny-come-lately 21st century book instead of a first century book?”

“What first century book?”

“Have you heard of Josephus, this eminent Jewish historian?”

While we leave Corey and Jason to continue their chat, why don’t we launch our own investigation?

If the book of Genesis has been altered, we should be able to discover some evidence. So let’s break up our investigation into five historical periods:

1. Adam to Moses (4000 to 1400 BC)
2. Moses to Josephus (1400 BC to 100 AD)
3. The Talmudists (100 to 500 AD)
4. The Masoretes (500 to 900 AD)
5. The intervening period (900 to 1947 AD)

1. Adam to Moses (4000 to 1400 BC)

In the preceding chapter these points were noted:

1. Ancient literary aids and cuneiform usages are still discernable in the book of Genesis, which **clearly reveal the purity of the text and the care with which it has been handed down to us, step by step, from the very first tablet.**

2. Now watch Moses with the inspired tablets before him, tablets written from the earliest days, as he is compiling his book. Most reverently does he handle these tablets. The first thing that impresses us as we read them now, is that **he regards the old wording as so sacred that usually he avoids making unnecessary alterations to the text, even to modernise words.** He leaves the original ancient expressions and place names just as he finds them, though they are no longer in current use.

3. It is evident that **Moses held these tablets in such high esteem that he made no attempt whatever to avoid the repetitions,** or to combine genealogies. The text was not corrupted by Moses. Of that much you can be certain.

2. Moses to Josephus (1400 BC to 100 AD)

The subsequent Hebrew copyists were not just trustworthy, but uniquely so.

You see, there are two important checks on the authenticity of the Tenach (the Old Testament), to which the critic, despite his awesome display of knowledge, appears to be blind.

UNFLINCHING HONESTY

The first is its honesty concerning the heroes, whether it be the history of David... or that of Abraham... or of Moses. Or you name it.

Many of the facts recorded about these men are of a kind which mere adulators would not have reported, still less have invented. They stick out

from the narrative by their sheer unflattering awkwardness, their uncompromising fidelity to truth.

For example, we read of Abraham's timidity and deception concerning his marriage to Sarah (Genesis 12:10-20), and later his impatience, lack of faith and bad judgment, which resulted in family turmoil (Genesis chapters 16 and 21). Also of Isaac's cheating (Gen.26:7-10) and Jacob's lying and stealing (Gen. ch.27).

And what do we discover about the writer's beloved nation of Israel? Contrary to what one might expect, Israel is repeatedly shown up to be a stiff-necked, ungrateful, rebellious group who keep forgetting the God who delivered them from their oppressors.

How can one explain this humiliating history, continuing on and on through the centuries, until "there was no remedy" and God's "servant", the heathen Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, was sent to drag them into exile to be taught a lesson?

So the writings were altered, were they? - to show the nation of Israel and the revered heroes in a favourable light? Someone has to be joking!

If we need evidence of the high standard of veracity prevailing in the Bible writings we have it in the Bible itself in its most convincing form.

The record was not rewritten or tampered with, to make its cause look good. It tells it like it is, warts and all. That's evidence of honesty.

PASSIONATE REVERENCE FOR THE WRITINGS

The second check on the integrity of the Scripture is in the Israelites' **extreme reverence for the sacred writings** – an obsessive reverence for every letter and word. For this reason, scribes made copies of the Old Testament manuscripts (including Genesis) in a way which is quite unique. They preserved them as no other manuscript in history has been preserved. Why? Because these documents played an important role in Israelite culture and government.

You see, religion was *their ruling passion*. They believed that the Bible was not of human origin, but was directly inspired by God Himself.

Therefore every letter and word had to be regarded with the highest reverence. And this could allow no changes.

And this reverence was reinforced by the most serious warnings in the text itself, forbidding any taking away or adding to, the words of God! Here are some of these warnings:

- * *I know that, whatsoever God doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be PUT TO it, nor any thing TAKEN FROM it: and God doeth it, that men should fear before him. (Ecclesiastes 3:14)*
- * *YE SHALL NOT ADD unto the word which I command you, NEITHER SHALL YE DIMINISH ought from it... (Deuteronomy 4:2)*
- * *ADD THOU NOT unto his words . . . (Proverbs 30:6)*

Ever since the time of Moses, the Hebrews have held not only Genesis, but the whole of the Old Testament texts in the highest reverence. They took the above warnings seriously. We have the testimony of the first century Jewish historian Flavius Josephus to this fact.

But first, in case there is any doubt concerning the integrity of Josephus' testimony, it may be helpful to hear what a man highly familiar with Josephus' work has to say.

Joseph Scaliger assures us:

Josephus is the most diligent and the greatest lover of truth of all writers: nor are we afraid to affirm of him, that it is more safe to believe him, not only as to the affairs of the Jews, but also as to those that are foreign to them, than all the Greek and Latin writers, and this, because his fidelity and his compass of learning are everywhere conspicuous. (Joseph Scaliger, in the Prolegomea to *De Emendations Temporum*, p.17)

Josephus testifies to the reverent attention to detail paid by Hebrew scribes in their faithful preservation of the biblical texts. He says:

We have given practical proof of our reverence for our own Scriptures. For, although such long ages have now passed, no one has ventured either to add, or to remove, or to alter a syllable; and it is an instinct with every Jew, from the day of his birth, to regard them as the decrees of God, to abide by

them, and, if need be, cheerfully to die for them. (Flavius Josephus, “Flavius Josephus Against Apion” *Josephus, Complete Works*. Translated by William Whiston. Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1960, pp.179,180)

Now notice how Josephus compares the Hebrew respect for Scripture with the Greek regard for their literature. Listen:

What Greek would endure as much for the same cause? Even to save the entire collection of his nation’s writings from destruction he would not face the smallest personal injury. For to the Greeks [their own writings] are mere stories improvised according to the fancy of their authors. (*Ibid.*, p. 181)

But for a Hebrew to interfere with what he awesomely regarded as God’s Word was unthinkable. Modern critics are so blissfully ***ignorant of this ancient Hebrew mind set*** – which is so different from their own. Or they can’t comprehend it.

It seems to me that the skeptic is thinking with his funny bone and not with his head.

As surely as the sun will rise tomorrow, so certain is it that during the period of Moses to Josephus, the Genesis text survived unviolated.

3. The Talmudists (100 to 500 AD)

Although such reverent regard for the text went right back to ancient times, we have more specific instructions preserved from the time of the Talmudists.

The Talmudists (AD 100-500) had quite an intricate system for transcribing the scrolls.

1. They had to be written on the skins of clean animals, and fastened together with strings from clean animals.
2. Every skin must contain a certain number of columns, equal throughout the entire manuscript.
3. The length and breadth of each column, together with the precise number of letters was specifically defined.

4. No word or letter, not even a yod, must be written from memory, without the scribe looking at the codex before him.
5. Between every consonant, new section, and book, a precisely-stipulated space must intervene.
6. The copyist had to wash his whole body, sit in full Jewish dress, and every time he wrote the name of God he must do so with a pen newly dipped in ink. (Samuel Davidson, *Hebrew Text of the Old Testament*. 2nd edition. London: Samuel Bagster and Sons, 1859, p. 89. Norman L. Geisler and William E. Nix, *A General Introduction to the Bible*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1968, p. 241)

And can you guess what they did to any rolls in which these rules were not observed? Such rolls were condemned to be buried in the ground or burned; or they were banished to the schools, to be used as reading-books.

This is such an interesting fact, why do we never hear of it?

And do you know, the Talmudists, after copying a manuscript, were so convinced that they had an exact duplicate, that they would give the new copy equal authority.

4. The Masoretes (500 to 900 AD)

The standard Hebrew text we have today is known as the Masoretic text. Those Masoretes (AD 500-900) were amazing. They counted the number of times each letter of the alphabet occurs in each book. They pointed out the middle letter of the Pentateuch (the 5 books of Moses) and the middle letter of the entire Hebrew Bible. And they made even more detailed calculations than those. (F.F. Bruce, *The Books and the Parchments*. Rev. ed. Westwood: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1963, p. 117)

They numbered the verses, words and letters of every book. They calculated the middle word and middle letter of each book.

And as Sir Frederic Kenyon so rightly points out:

These trivialities had the effect of securing minute attention to the precise transmission of the text;... The Masoretes were indeed anxious that not one jot nor tittle, not one smallest letter nor one tiny part of a letter, of the Law should pass away or be lost. (Frederic G. Kenyon, *Our Bible and the Ancient Manuscripts*. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1941, p. 38)

There you have it. Tell me, whoever counted the letters and syllables and words of Plato or Aristotle or Seneca...or of the oft-touted Sumerian texts?

5. The intervening period (900 to 1947 AD)

The last Hebrew manuscripts of the Torah (the Old Testament) had been completed around 400 BC. But until 1947, the oldest complete surviving Hebrew manuscript dated back only to about AD 900. This made a time gap between the original and the oldest copy of 1,300 years.

And then, in 1947, just a simple thing happened. An Arab shepherd boy wandered the hills of Qumran near the Dead Sea, in search of a missing sheep.

He threw a stone into a cave, hoping to drive the lost animal outside. Instead, the sound of shattered pottery drew him inside the cave. And in the cave were dozens of pottery jars. Thinking that the cave was haunted, the boy ran away.

Later, a man returned with the boy and found more than 40 jars inside the cave, many of them broken. The jars contained no treasure in the ordinary sense, but dozens of leather and papyrus scrolls bearing ancient writing. Some of these scrolls were brought to experts, who declared that the scrolls contained copies of some books of the Old Testament.

These scrolls had been hidden by a sect of Jews called Essenes. At some time before the Christian era began, the Essenes had retired to this desert area.

Then in the year 68, when a Roman army entered the region, the Essenes fled, leaving their library of biblical scrolls hidden in a cave, where they remained unseen for almost 19 centuries! All of these books may not have been Essene. Many of them may have come originally from other places, such as the Temple in Jerusalem.

In the years that followed, archaeologists found eleven caves and more than 900 documents here at Qumran.

These ancient writings became known as the Dead Sea Scrolls, which scholars date before the first century.

One of those scrolls was a complete Hebrew manuscript copy of Isaiah. Dated around 125 BC, it was more than 1,000 years older than any other.

The question naturally arose: Would these older scrolls reveal that discrepancies and changes had crept in during the intervening one thousand years? Scholars held their breath. Gradually, the Isaiah scroll of BC 125 was compared letter by letter with the Masoretic text of Isaiah of 1,000 years later.

And what was the result? It was found to be *in precise agreement* with the text of 1,000 years later.

Gleason Archer reports on the results:

Even though the two copies of Isaiah discovered in Qumran Cave 1 near the Dead Sea in 1947 were a thousand years earlier than the oldest dated manuscript previously known (AD 980), they proved to be word for word identical with our standard Hebrew Bible in more than 95 percent of the text. The 5 percent of variation consisted chiefly of obvious slips of the pen and variations in spelling. (Gleason Archer, *A Survey of the Old Testament*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1964, p. 25)

A typical example is Isaiah chapter 53. Of its 166 *words*, only 17 *letters* are in question. Ten of these letters are simply in spelling. Four other letters are tiny stylistic changes, like conjunctions. And the remaining three letters comprise the word *light* (in verse 11), which is supported by other manuscripts.

So there you have it. In a chapter of 166 words, just *one* 3-letter word is in question after 1,000 years of transmission – and this single word does not materially change the meaning of the passage.

Don't you think that's an amazing preservation? A manuscript from 125 BC virtually word for word identical with the text of a thousand years later!

The further you investigate, the more apparent does it become that the surviving manuscripts are trustworthy.

Meticulous preservation even of foreign words

The correct transmission of names is notoriously difficult. Copies of Manetho's list of 140 Egyptian kings when compared with Egyptian monuments, has 63 of them unrecognizable in any single syllable.

In contrast, the text in the Bible has been transmitted with the minutest accuracy. There are places where the biblical text transliterates from Egyptian, Babylonian, Assyrian and Moabite into Hebrew, and vice versa. And yet the evidence shows that for up to 3,900 years the text even of those foreign proper names in the Hebrew Bible was handed down with total accuracy. Those copyist scribes were something else!

Unique in literature

After investigating this feature, Robert Dick Wilson was able to testify:

That the original scribes should have written them with such close conformity to correct philological principles is a wonderful proof of their thorough care and scholarship; further, that the Hebrew text should have been transmitted by copyists through so many centuries with the most minute accuracy is a phenomenon unequaled in the history of literature. (Robert Dick Wilson, *A Scientific Investigation of the Old Testament*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1959, p. 71)

Yes, you CAN be certain that the Hebrew Bible text has been transmitted accurately. An Under-Librarian of the library at Cambridge University by the name of Atkinson calls this accuracy of transmission "little short of miraculous." (Josh McDowell, *Evidence That Demands a Verdict*. San Bernardino, Cal.: Here's Life Publishers, Inc., 1986, p. 56)

A thorough investigation will show that of all the ancient works of substantial size, only one comes to us completely intact – the Bible. This is against all odds.

Compare this with William Shakespeare's plays, written only about 400 years ago. These plays are in much worse shape... original words have been lost in numerous sections. And scholars are left to fill in the blanks as best as they can. Were you aware of that?

On the other hand, the Bible has weathered thousands of years of wars, persecutions, fires and invasions, and still remains intact. Its preservation is one of the wonders of the world. It has more manuscript evidence to support it than any ten pieces of classical literature combined.

M. Montier-Williams was a professor of Sanskrit. Over several decades he studied the religious books of the East. Then he compared them with the Bible. Here was his conclusion:

Pile them, if you will, on the left side of your study table, but place your own Bible on the right side... [There is] a gulf between it and the so-called sacred books of the East which severs the one from the other utterly, hopelessly, and forever. (Gray, private files)

Why do critics persist?

QUESTION: Then why do critics say that changes were made after the time of Moses, or after such and such a time?"

ANSWER: Most often it's because they simply parrot the words of other critics, without checking. Sometimes we can let our prejudices get in the way.

And then there is the teenie-weenie matter of honesty, or lack of it.

Billions of dollars are being poured into institutions of learning to undermine Genesis, so that the unenlightened masses will simply acquiesce when the Globalists carry out their culling (killing) of two thirds of today's world population.

Critics confounded

Still, it is safe to say that some higher critical theories would never have seen the light of day, had they been enlightened by recent archaeological discovery. Their fundamental mistakes were **largely due to the lack of knowledge** concerning ancient times.

- Some theories were born in an age of ignorance concerning early civilizations.
- The critics attempted a literary analysis when they knew nothing of the early methods of writing.
- The majority assumed that civilization was primitive, and writing almost unknown to the Bible patriarchs.
- Their speculations became dominated by the evolution theory that relegated Genesis into mere “myth and legend”.

Although such theories are now wholly untenable, based upon assumptions now obsolete, yet – to one’s amazement - there are still some scholars who have not abandoned these theories. Those who claim to be modernists or liberal critics are often the most resistant to factual discovery.

And so, many archaeological discoveries that vindicate Genesis are not getting through to young people in schools and colleges. In some circles there even seems to be a deliberate withholding of such information, yet it is the fruit of leading scholars.

And you don’t have to look far to see why. Today’s New World Order philosophy is anchored to the theory of evolution, which is hell-bent on eliminating Genesis.

You have to smile when someone speaks of “the assured results of modern criticism”. That is as unscientific as it is inaccurate. Such results are neither assured nor modern.

The bottom line is that there is not a person living today who is in a position to refute the Genesis account.

We have briefly investigated the question, How can one know that the book of Genesis has not been tampered with over the centuries?

But there is one more evidence which will definitely qualify as scientific in the sense that it can be repeated. It is an in-built ***self-checking, self-verifying*** factor found within the book of Genesis itself.

And if the facts in the next chapter are true, then all remaining objections must be considered redundant.

So please be my guest and scrutinise what follows very closely.

21 Sub-surface code

WHY YOU COULD NEVER WRITE GENESIS IF YOU TRIED!

OBJECTION: Genesis, and, for that matter, the whole Bible, is merely a man-made book, of no unique value.

In 1994, scholars at the Hebrew University and Jerusalem College of Technology announced the discovery of a hidden code in the Bible.

This code had been discovered by Dr Eliyahu Rips, a world expert mathematician in quantum physics. It was later confirmed by famous mathematicians at Yale, Harvard and Hebrew University and replicated by a senior code-breaker at the United States Department of Defence.

When investigative reporter Michael Drosnin cashed in on the discovery, building on the work of Dr Rips, his book *The Bible Code* became a best seller. However, some analysts carefully pointed out that Drosnin's work was flawed by his attempt to use the Bible code to predict the future.

The “skipping” code

This alleged code was discovered in the original language version of the Old Testament, namely, the Hebrew. It was found woven into the text in the form of equidistant letter sequence. That is to say, letters spaced at regular, equal distances throughout the text spelled out related pairs of words containing messages.

You might take, for example, the word *Torh* (pronounced “Torah” and meaning “The Law of God”) – which is the name for the first five books of the Bible. Now, if you took ***the first Hebrew “T” in the first line of the first book of the Torah, Genesis***, then counted out each subsequent 49th letter ($49 = 7 \times 7$), every four letters spells ***Torh*** (*Torah*).

This holds all the way through the first two books of the Bible, ***Genesis*** and ***Exodus***.

When you get to the middle book of the five, Leviticus, it stops. However, when you apply the same 7×7 skip sequence to the last two books of the five, ***Deuteronomy*** and ***Numbers***, it spells ***Hrot***, which is *Torh* backwards... but still in perfect sequence.

Go back now to the middle book of the five (***Leviticus***). ***Starting at the first “Y”***, use the skip sequence again, this time skipping every 7 letters, and it spells YHWH (pronounced Yahweh) - the Hebrew name for *God*.

<i>Genesis</i> <i>Exodus</i>	<i>Leviticus</i>	<i>Numbers</i> <i>Deuteronomy</i>
<i>Skip every 7 x 7 letters</i> Torh -> Torh -> Torh ->	<i>Skip every 7 letters</i> YHWH	<i>Skip every 7 x 7 letters</i> <- Hrot <- Hrot <- Hrot

Another example given by the code-breakers was a passage in Genesis concerning the Garden of Eden with its trees. It says: “... *and the Lord God caused to grow out of the ground, every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food; and the tree of life in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil...*” (Gen.2:9)

Hidden under this ***surface passage***, a computer search uncovered in the ***sub-surface code*** the names of 31 trees, encoded at equidistant intervals into that one 43-word section – and nowhere else in the book!

Rabbi David Ordman, spokesman for the 20 university researchers, said:

To plan this kind of thing [for this single sentence] would take years. And they had to prepare the text as well, with perfect grammar, a message, and no contradictions.... We are not trying to prove the divinity of the Torah here, but that ***the statistical odds against it being humanly written are impossible***. (*The Mail on Sunday*, August 4, 1985)

Which got newspapers asking, “Is Someone ‘out there’ having a game?”
 Jeffery Satinover reports on the attempts of critics to debunk the code:

Scientists, statisticians, and mathematicians from Harvard, Yale, and Carnegie-Mellon universities sought to find its flaws; none could. One such critic, Persi Diaconis at Harvard, an eminent statistician, was so fiercely opposed to the codes that he developed a brilliantly inventive mathematical method to refute them. He, too, failed; indeed, the Israeli team used this very method to substantiate their findings. What they claimed to have found – and seemed to have demonstrated to exacting standards – was this: that precise details not just about large-scale events, but from the lives of a whole set of individuals could be found encoded in the Book of Genesis. (Dr Jeffrey Satinover, *The Truth Behind the Bible Code*. London: Sedgwick and Jackson, 1997, p. 6)

This code, quite independently of the plain surface text, it was claimed, showed evidence of a prophetic foreknowledge of people and events hundreds, even thousands, of years into the future from the time the Bible was written.

It was stated that so intricate, complex and clever was this code - so above human intelligence to create - that it was found only with the help of computers. The amount of information encoded into a limited text, in which the same arrangement of letters could contain multiple meanings – this was something beyond the capacity of any individual (or group) to create, whatever computing resources were available.

Other layers of information?

It was then announced that, according to ancient tradition, there were **73 different layers of information** in the text of the Torah (the first five books of the Bible). Of these, “skipping letters” was just one layer (listed by Rabbi Eliezer as number 54). (*Ibid.*, p. 250)

Can you imagine a book constructed with several different layers of coded information hidden under the text... each layer independent of the other and each complete in itself?

Having not myself directly researched this “skipping” code, I mention it not to endorse it, but rather, so it will not be confused with *something quite separate* found in the Bible... which I shall call the *sevens* code.

A more amazing code

Some of us assume - because we’ve heard so - that Genesis and the rest of the Bible are just a collection of ordinary, man-made documents.

But you are about to discover that *no persons in the world could have forged these writings*, even had they wanted to.

May I stress the need for very careful concentration on what follows. I am about to share with you a unique phenomenon. And it lies deep *below the surface* of the Bible. It is a discovery that has staggered the cleverest brains in the world. But I shall explain it as simply as I can. Are you ready?

Number design in nature

As we get into this, may I ask you a question? Did you know that a numeric scheme runs through nature? Everything operates according to mathematical laws.

Were you aware, for example, that the human body seems to be stamped with the number SEVEN? Your body consists of 7 main parts – head, neck, trunk and four limbs – 7 in all. Did you know that the development of the human embryo is in exact periods of 7s, such as 28 days (4×7)? Ask your doctor to explain. You’ll be amazed at the accuracy of this law.

Is this arrangement of 7s merely accidental? You may already know that this number 7 or its multiples marks the period of gestation and incubation of many birds and animals.

After laying its eggs, the common hen sits on them for 21 days (3×7); the pigeon sits on its eggs for 14 days (2×7). The duck takes 28 days to hatch its duckling eggs (4×7); the goose hatches after 35 days (5×7); the swan 42 days (6×7); hundreds of varieties of small birds have been checked at 14 days (2×7); larger birds, such as the emperor penguin,

ostrich or emu take precisely 49, 56 or 63 days ($7 \times 7 \dots 8 \times 7 \dots$ or 9×7). If the hen leaves her eggs on the 20th day, there'll be no chicks.

The seal calves on the rocks and suckles its young for 14 days (2×7). The ova of salmon are hatched in 140 days (20×7). The gestation period of the mouse is 21 days (3×7); the rabbit 28 days (4×7); the cat 56 days (8×7); the dog 63 days (9×7); the lion 14×7 ; the sheep 21×7 ; the cow 40×7 ; the elephant 90×7 . And so on. The ova of the glow worm occupy 42 days (6×7), and of the mole cricket 28 days in hatching (4×7). The period of the bee in the larva is 7 days. In moths it is 42 days (6×7)

Come to think of it, in chemistry, music and art, we find the same number 7 playing an important role. Both sound and light are subject to the law of 7. How has it come about, for example, that the human ear responds to 7 distinct intervals in a scale of one octave? In the rainbow are 7 colors – red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, violet.

Is this a mark of intentional design?

Okay, you ask, but what's this got to do with the book of Genesis?

The “watermark”

Well, I was coming to that. You see, this very same design of 7s has been found embedded both *on and beneath the surface* of Genesis and its companion books! It seems that both the Bible and nature are stamped with the same fingerprint – just as surely as various papers from the same mill bear beneath their surface the watermark of *that mill alone*.

Chain features that link the books

I was astonished to discover that, quite independently of the obvious narrative, is a “watermark” design woven through the surface message of Genesis – this same *pattern of ‘seven’*, if you please! In fact, chain features of 7 run through the whole Bible. For example, you will find precisely 7 oak trees, 7 earthquakes, 7 references to the Book of Life, 7 lamps of fire, 7 seals, and so on.

Now that might not seem at all remarkable, until we discover that this involves something else - a **“cross-over” pattern**. By this, I mean, an uncompleted portion of a series of 7 will **cross over from one book to another**, until it totals 7 and then stops.

You see, the sevens pattern becomes complete only when all of the books of the Bible are placed together.

Did the writers conspire?

Of course, it might be objected that the writers of the biblical books conspired to achieve this total result.

An interesting theory. But that does raise a tiny problem. You see, it turns out that the books of the Bible were penned over a period of 1,600 years by up to 40 different writers from widely different backgrounds in different countries. So would someone please explain to us just how they could have conspired together?

But then there emerges an even bigger problem. When you think about it, there is **ONLY ONE POSSIBLE WAY** that a writer could have **achieved the phenomenon of including words that ONLY HE used**. And that would be for each and every one of the writers to write his book **LAST!**

You see, a particular feature will appear to a total of 7 (or multiples of 7) times, but this occurs **ONLY WHEN** you place **all the books** together... with that particular feature scattered through several different books until it totals 7 appearances overall.

For example, **the name David** appears throughout the Old Testament exactly 1,134 times (162 x 7). The name Jeremiah occurs in 7 Old Testament books, with exactly 147 (21 x 7) mentions. **The name Moses** occurs in the various books of the Bible exactly 847 (121 x 7) times.

A certain Bible concordance (a book that indexes every word in the Bible) was prepared by C.F. Hudson, supervised by H.L. Hastings and checked by Ezra Abbot. It listed what were thought to be all of the Bible references to the word “Moses”. It catalogued the name as appearing 846 times. But according to our numeric discovery, that had to be wrong – because 846 does not divide evenly by 7. However, 847 does. Could it be that the concordance was in error – and that it had omitted one reference?

Indeed so. The scholarly gentlemen who prepared that index had overlooked a reference in the book of Hebrews! The error was detected by applying the numeric design occurring in the structured Bible text!

The Bible is literally filled with these chain features! **This chain feature forms only when all the books are brought together.** No single writer could have produced it. Neither could all the different writers have collaborated to produce it – since most of them never knew each other.

So much for the surface pattern. But now let's explore *beneath* the surface – and we shall discover something even more amazing.

A different “sevens” pattern beneath the surface

You may already know that the Old Testament of the Bible was written in Hebrew and the New Testament in Greek. But were you aware that in these two languages each letter of the alphabet also doubles as a number?

NUMERIC VALUES OF EACH LETTER IN THE HEBREW ALPHABET

Alef	א = 1	Tet	ט = 9	Pei	פ = 80
Bet	ב = 2	Yod	י = 10	Tzadi	צ = 90
Gimel	ג = 3	Kaf	כ = 20	Kof	ק = 100
Dalet	ד = 4	Lamed	ל = 30	Reish	ר = 200
Hei	ה = 5	Mem	מ = 40	Shin	ש = 300
Vav	ו = 6	Nun	נ = 50	Tav	ת = 400
Zayin	ז = 7	Samech	ס = 60		
Chet	ח = 8	Ayin	ע = 70		

You are probably familiar with the fact that there is one other language in which **some** letters also serve as numbers - Latin.

We see this on the faces of old clocks - where V equals 5 and X is 10. In Latin, C represents 100, and so on. But this letter-number equivalence in Latin applies only to **some** letters.

However, in Hebrew and Greek, **every** letter has a numerical value. So when you read a word or sentence, you are simultaneously looking at a string of numbers.

And that brings us to a discovery made by a Russian scientist, Dr Ivan Panin. Panin was one of the ten top mathematicians of his day in the United States. He taught in universities and knew up to 14 languages. He loved playing with numbers.

One day in 1882, this mathematical genius found himself experimenting. Knowing Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek, he began reading the Bible in *its original languages*.

He experimented by replacing the letters in the Bible with their corresponding numbers.

Suddenly his excitement welled up. His trained mind began to see a mathematical pattern!

He kept experimenting. After a few hours he was totally hooked.

The passages he had studied revealed unmistakable evidence of an elaborate numerical pattern. But this was so intricate, it was far beyond random chance, nor human ability to construct.

As we have noted, the Old Testament was written in **Hebrew**, the New Testament in **Greek**. These are two languages in which every letter, word and sentence has a numeric value. The word value is the sum total of each letter value.

This means that on the surface, you can read the Bible in everyday words, as in any other book. But, in addition to this, the individual letters together spell out a complex mathematical code.

And this is composed of an interlocking pattern of **sevens**. Would you like to see an example?

A juggling game that defies the world's cleverest men

Why don't we start with the very first sentence in Genesis?:

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth." (Genesis 1:1)

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth															
God				created				In the beginning							
את				אלהים				ברא				בראשית			
400 1				40 10 5 30 1				1 200 2				400 10 300 1 200 2			
the earth				and				the heavens							
הארץ				ואת				השמים							
90 200 1 5				400 1 6				40 10 40 300 5							

- This sentence contains exactly **seven** Hebrew words.
- These comprise 28 letters (4 x 7).
- The three nouns (God, heaven, earth) have a total numeric value of exactly 777.
- The first three Hebrew words (containing the subject) have exactly 14 (2 x 7) letters.
- The fourth and fifth words have exactly 7 letters.
- The fifth and sixth words have 7 letters.
- The Hebrew words for the two objects "the heavens and the earth" **each** have exactly 7 letters.
- The numeric value of the first and last letters of the whole 7 words is 1,393 (199 x 7).
- The value of the first and last letters of the first and last words of the sentence is 497 (71 x 7).
- So the value of the first and last letters between is 896 (128 x 7).
- The last letters of the first and last words have a numeric value of 490 (70 x 7).

In fact, there are over 30 different numeric features of *seven* in this first simple sentence of the Bible. These *seven* Hebrew words were so chosen and arranged that the number *seven* is literally woven into them *in every conceivable way*.

Not only that. Vital statements are sealed by the numeric design *exactly fitted within the statement itself*.

These 7s are so deeply concealed that special searching, investigating and counting is necessary to find them. They are not seen by ordinary reading.

Anyway, as it turned out, this discovery was to change the course of Panin's life. For the next 60 years, he would use every working moment to painstakingly write out over 43,000 pages of data. He found the whole Bible to be an intricate matrix revolving around the number 7 and prime factors of 7.

There could be no reasonable doubt that the Bible, in its original language, was a skilfully designed artefact. Panin realised it was nothing less than the product of a mathematical mastermind. What Panin had discovered was a phenomenon *far beyond any human possibility* to deliberately structure.

The eminent scientist would later present his findings – all 43,000 pages of them – to the Nobel Research Foundation. He also presented to them his conclusion that the Bible could only be the work of Someone with the Mind of the Creator. Nothing less.

The reply of the Nobel Research Foundation was:

As far as our investigation has proceeded... we find the evidence overwhelmingly in favor of such a statement.

The challenge

Next, Panin issued a challenge through the world's leading newspapers. He challenged anyone to either submit a "natural explanation", or refute the evidence.

Now, may I ask, have you ever seen a headline announcing that someone has succeeded in meeting either of these challenges?

Of course you haven't. And so the question must – must – be asked: *WHY NOT?*

What about other holy books?

Some people have made the helpful suggestion that perhaps this feature is present in other books as well. An interesting idea.

Well, many long, painstaking and careful searches have been made. And with what result? The truth is, this numerical design is found **in no other literature**. Yes, there have been sincere efforts to find such numerics in the Greek classics (Homer's *Iliad* and others), the *Septuagint*, the *Koran* and other works, but they have proven unsuccessful.

This numeric pattern cannot be found in any other holy books. Not in even one of them.

If you **add** the *Apocryphal books* to the Bible, as one religious group does, the numerical pattern of the Bible as a **WHOLE** is **thwarted**. Not one of the phenomena, such as the Number of Proper Names, the Number of Letters in the Alphabet used, and so on, remains when these books are included.

For that matter, **not one** of the *Apocryphal books* contains ANY numeric pattern phenomena of any ascertainable sort! One might reasonably conclude that this refutes any claim by any religion that the *Apocryphal books* are from God. The fact that these books do not contain even ONE of the numerical phenomena is sufficient evidence that these books should not be considered Scripture with the Bible.

It appears that no works of man show evidence of such designs. It seems that **MAN JUST CANNOT DO IT**.

Beyond chance

In fact, such a complete *interlocking system of sevens* is so far removed from chance (the Law of Chance puts it at one in 33 odd trillion) that, humanly speaking, it is *impossible*.

These numeric phenomena in the Bible are so pronounced that though they comprise, as it were, *a dozen rings within rings, wheels within wheels, yet each is perfect in itself.*

Now, here is something that requires an explanation. Amazingly, there is **not a single paragraph** out of the hundreds **in Genesis** that is not constructed on exactly the same plan.

Why man cannot compose it

You can appreciate that, with each additional paragraph, the difficulty of construction increases, not in arithmetical but in geometrical progression. Because the writer must write his paragraphs so as to develop constantly fixed numeric relations to what has gone before, as well as to what follows.

And there's the point. With each additional sentence the difficulty greatly increases, and owing to the limitations of human intellect, soon becomes hopeless.

Yes, believe it. Scholars who have set out to accomplish a similar thing, admit that after struggling for days their efforts were in vain without reducing the passage to a meaningless jumble. One such attempt was made by a Dr D.B. Turkey. He reports:

I gave numeric values to the English alphabet, and tried to prepare a message which would adhere to the numerics, and make every section a multiple of seven, and present all the other features of Biblical arithmography, without letting the meaning of the passage descend to nonsense. After working on it for days, I could get no satisfaction. Yet this feature is accomplished in every one of the thousands of Bible paragraphs without the slightest visible effort.

But now, are you ready for this? This "sevens" phenomenon is ***not just in the book of Genesis.*** **The whole Bible** is like this! Yes, **every paragraph, passage and book** is constructed under the surface in the same astonishing way.

Can you explain this? Here are 40 different biblical characters who mostly never knew each other (so it was impossible for them to

collaborate). Yet this same numeric pattern crosses from one book to another, independent of each writer, bringing the whole into harmony.

Can you grasp the immensity of this? You discover here not just words, but an astonishing design of interlocking 7s – like wheels within wheels – woven together in every conceivable way, *below* the surface.

You can't pull out one word, without changing the pattern. No wonder this claim is recorded, '*The Scripture cannot be broken.*' (John 10:35) How shall we face this? You cannot argue with mathematics. It's an exact science. And here is proof that deals with mathematical certainties. The scientific method... the hard logic... the sound laws of reasoning. What can one say? If there's one amazing fact on this planet, this must be it!

One has to admit that which ever way you look at it, this is scientifically foolproof. It can withstand any amount of testing.

May I say it again. If you sat down to produce similar phenomena of 7s, your brain would soon be reeling, because every time you adjusted one portion it would upset another! It's just too complex.

Evidence of a supreme Master Mind

There can be no reasonable doubt that

1. Man is unable to design these numeric schemes.
2. The writers themselves knew nothing of their presence.

Now, we've already discovered that a succession of men was involved in writing Genesis before Moses got to compile it. Either these men were under the guidance of the same Master Mind as they wrote each letter and word, or else Moses, as compiler, was under that Master Mind control. Because neither they nor he could have made up this numerics design.

Frankly, I don't see how one can avoid it. We are staring here at the **evidence of a Master Mind – Someone out there.** A Mind that paid excruciating attention to the precise letter-by-letter sequence of Genesis.

Self-verifying protection factor

In the previous chapter, we investigated the question, How can one know

the Bible has not been tampered with over the centuries? How can we be sure what was originally in it?

Well, you be the judge. This *sevens* code within the document – is it not a *self-checking, self-verifying* protection factor?

You see, if any passage did not fit the numeric pattern, we could determine precisely where the tampering had been done! Does that make sense?

And such a test has actually been done! By means of the numeric designs, Ivan Panin settled every one of the alternative readings left by the translators Westcott and Hort in their Greek Bible text. The result was his scholarly *Numeric Greek New Testament* and his *Numeric English New Testament*.

THE SAME MAN DISAGREED WITH HIMSELF

The editors of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* sent an historical article, which had been in the book for a good many years, to the head of a western United States university history department for possible revision. It came back with the caustic comment that it was “badly disorganised and full of errors.”

Curious to see who had written such an “inaccurate” article for them originally, the editors checked their files. They were flabbergasted to find that the article had been written by the professor himself – so many years before that he had forgotten it.

40 MEN – BUT THE IMPOSSIBLE HAPPENED

About 40 men wrote the Bible. They produced 66 books. They belonged to different generations, centuries, and ages in human history. They lived in different lands. Their writing stretched over 1,500 years. Rather, make that 4,000 years. If we go back to the first of the succession of recorders - Adam – the writings span at least 4,000 years.

This means that collusion and conspiracy were altogether impossible. Many of those writers never saw or communicated with any of the others. They were reared in different environments, moulded by different national experiences, spoke different languages. One was the founder of the world’s first republic and a great lawgiver, another was an exile in Babylon, another a herdsman of a small village, another a cupbearer at

the Persian court, another a shepherd lad who later became a king. Some were rulers, others subjects. Some were rich, others poor. Some were educated, others untaught.

They wrote in three languages – Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek – on every conceivable subject, and in every form of literary expression – history, biography, poetry, oratory, proverbs, prophecy, parables, ethical teachings, legal enactments, elaborate rituals, romances, love lyrics, tragedies, plain precepts, moral maxims, drama, Oriental imagery.

Yet these 40 writers of such different temperaments, writing on such widely different subjects, in various countries, and in different languages, did not conflict. In all that they wrote there is a most amazing harmony.

When the writings are placed side by side, there is a unity running through them, a pattern which suggests a single author. In reality, they produced ONE book. Such a thing is absolutely unparalleled in literature.

And then, as if that wasn't enough, we discover the same hidden *sevens* code beneath the surface, in every one of them! How are we going to explain that?

The claim of authorship

It can hardly be doubted that this is **not the work of many minds, but of one Mind**... the same Mind, it appears, that wrote that DNA code and the “sevens” code in the incubation of birds and the gestation of mammals, as well as your body and mine. Isn't this something the world needs to hear about?

Now for an outrageous question: Is the Bible God's mind in print? Is He speaking to us through its pages?

Jewish tradition holds that God dictated the first five books of the Bible to Moses, letter by letter. And even if Moses had access to a series of tablets already prepared – written by a holy line of ancestors, from Adam onward, the Bible does speak of a succession of inspired men from Adam's time. (Luke 1:69-70 ; Acts 3:21) It claims that *those “holy men of God” who wrote* what eventually went into the Bible were moved by the Spirit of God. They *were divinely guided exactly what to write*. (2 Pet.1:21)

The Bible testifies concerning its own origins: "All Scripture is *inspired by God* and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for training in righteousness; that the man of God may be adequate, equipped for every good work." The word "inspired" is literally "*God-breathed*." This is an interesting phrase, since it implies that the Scriptures are *from the mouth of God*." (2 Tim.3:16-17)

One researcher counted more than **3,800 times** when the writers of the Scripture used some variant of the formula, "The Word of the Lord came to me, saying..."

The Bible claims to be the Creator's message to man... and not man's ideas about God. Time and again, the individuals who wrote the text of the Hebrew Bible, the Old Testament, claimed they were merely dutiful scribes. They said they were simply recording the words of a personage called the Lord or God. Each one was saying: "*God really spoke these words I'm writing*."

In this self-proclaimed "letter from God" we read this same astounding claim made over and over:

- * *"I, even I, am the Lord, and besides me there is no saviour."*
(Isa.43:11)
- * *"I am the First and I am the Last; besides me there is no God."*
(Isa.44:6)
- * *"I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times things that are not yet done."* (Isa.46:9-10)

So I ask you, could this numeric code be the Creator's fingerprint? This code, stamped all over, interlocked and interwoven – does this make it the most credible document on earth... or what?

21st century science in Genesis

But we're not finished yet. Here's something else to blow your mind. It's in that first sentence of Genesis - בְּרֵאשִׁית בָּרָא, אֶת הַשָּׁמַיִם וְאֶת הָאָרֶץ, - 'In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.' (Genesis 1:1)

Now watch this thought closely, and carefully, for it is a subtle thing, and requires a subtle mind to catch it.

It is extremely probable that these seven Hebrew words were purposely intended to rest on an independent and meaningful *substructure of their very own*.

Not only is every letter making up that sentence also a *number*. And not only in this Creation account are there found patterns of numbers and inter-relations of numbers that are in themselves quite boggling.

But in Hebrew, every letter was a *picture*, as well. The shape of the picture told a story. And the *sound* of each letter also told a story. Thus the letters present us with pictures in words, shape, sound and number. That means that there are *dimensions* to this creation account which go well beyond the surface story.

These dimensions include

- the structure of the periodic table of elements
- geometry (the tetrahedron, sphere and circle)
- the value of Pi (π), the ratio of a circle's area to the square of its radius - calculated to 3 decimal places - 3.141
- the value of the exponential variable (the base of The Natural Logarithm) - 2.71828
- details of physics, chemistry, biochemistry
- the relationship of time, space and matter
- astronomical information (including the lunar month and year)
- anatomy (the number of vertebrae in the human body, the major nerves in the human spine, the 46 human chromosomes, DNA)
- spirituality and relationships (including prescription for a happy marriage, love, a guide to meditation and prayer, and so on).

Now, you will understand that this opens up a new dimension of study altogether. It is not within the scope of this report to go into those amazing details. It is enough to state for now that all of this scientific data is coded into this first sentence of the Bible. It is found embedded within the relationships of every word and letter and in other layers of information built into this single sentence of seven Hebrew words.

When you think about it, **everything on this planet – our very origins, and hence our destiny - hinges on this opening statement:** *“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.”* And wonder of wonders, this simple sentence is embedded with complex subsurface

scientific knowledge. Is there a deliberate reason for this? It's enough to make your spine tingle!

These evidences of deep design in the Bible's opening words throw a completely new light on the true status of the book of Genesis, for Who alone is capable of simultaneously speaking into existence a meaningful sentence copiously embroidered with such a variety of significant number structures - these incorporating the Author's own signature?

A challenge to every skeptic

I submit that such an interplay of complex designs leaves little room for doubt that here is the work of a supremely intelligent and purposeful mind. So: *Whose mind?*

Still another 'sevens' feature

Since the book of Genesis is signed in every conceivable way with the number 7, it should not surprise us to discover that it also comprises exactly 78,064 Hebrew letters. Just look what makes up this number:

$$* \quad 77700 = 100 \times 777$$

$$* \quad + 343 = 7 \times 7 \times 7$$

$$* \quad + 21 = 7 + 7 + 7$$

Total: 78064

Now look at that once more... carefully. Can you imagine a sevens design more perfect?

You may ask, *why* was this information encoded into the text? Could the answer be that this is the Supreme One's way of assuring us that He is precisely who He said He is – our Creator?

Just think about it. Since the foregoing facts are beyond reasonable doubt, does it require any special sagacity to perceive that this may be *the best source of information on our planet?*

May one go further to suggest that it contains the solution to our planet's problems?

Yet, some poor skeptic with a death wish will continue to ignore this and cling to the tired old “Genesis-myth” notion. It seems that a man’s opinions become fixed, to the point where he stops thinking.

Another challenge

Here is some later news. Copies of the *Bible numerics report* were submitted to over 500 of the best known centers for agnostic or atheist beliefs, including universities and centres of learning conducted by non-Christian organizations. This challenge was issued:

Disprove the report and its data OR produce any other book written by men that contains the same phenomena!

ONLY one condition was stipulated: the phenomena MUST be from inherent factors of the language and not "contrived" by manipulation. In other words, the phenomena must occur in a natural feature of the language in which it was written. (Translations are unable to maintain such phenomena.)

The challenge was qualified by this statement:

All evidence for numeric structure of text will qualify as "scientific" in the sense that it can be repeated. And we invite such scrutiny.

Again, no one has been able to meet the challenge.

You can try this yourself

With the “sevens key” provided in Genesis 1:1, you can proceed to analyze the whole Bible.

Consider that there are in excess of three million words or twenty million characters in the 66 books of the Bible. And bear in mind that the "evidence" would be null and void, in most cases, if EVEN ONE CHARACTER WERE DELETED, CHANGED OR ADDED!

Here are the results of a complete Bible investigation and analysis:

1. The NUMBER of WORDS in the VOCABULARY will divide evenly by SEVEN.
2. The NUMBER of WORDS that begin with a vowel will divide evenly by SEVEN.
3. The NUMBER of WORDS that begin with a consonant will divide evenly by SEVEN.
4. The NUMBER of WORDS that begin with each letter of the language's alphabet will divide evenly by SEVEN.
5. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur more than once will divide evenly by SEVEN.
6. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur only once will divide evenly by SEVEN.
7. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur in only one form will divide evenly by SEVEN.
8. The NUMBER of WORDS that occur in more than one form will divide evenly by SEVEN.
9. The NUMBER of WORDS that are nouns will divide evenly by SEVEN.
10. The NUMBER of WORDS that are not nouns will divide evenly by SEVEN.
11. The NUMBER of LETTERS in the vocabulary will divide evenly by SEVEN.
12. The NUMBER of LETTERS that are vowels will divide evenly by SEVEN.
13. The NUMBER of LETTERS that are consonants will divide evenly by SEVEN.
14. The NUMBER of PROPER NAMES will divide evenly by SEVEN.
15. The NUMBER of MALE PROPER NAMES will divide evenly by SEVEN.
16. The NUMBER of FEMALE PROPER NAMES will divide evenly by SEVEN.
17. The TOTAL NUMERIC VALUE OF ALL THE WORDS will divide evenly by SEVEN.
18. The NUMERIC VALUE OF THE VARIOUS FORMS in which the words occur will divide evenly by SEVEN.
19. The NUMBER OF WORDS THAT ARE FOUND in the Bible will divide evenly by SEVEN.
20. The NUMBER OF PROMISES FOUND in the Bible will divide evenly by SEVEN.

There is a term called a Google (sometimes spelt as Gogle), which is ONE followed by 100 Zeros. (Some definitions enlarge on this and claim that Google is a BILLION TO THE BILLIONTH POWER!) GOOGLEPLEX is a GOOGLE to the power of GOOGLE.

Let's illustrate the immensity of this figure, say, in terms of years. Suppose we had a mountain the size of Mount Everest that was solid DIAMOND - and a bird came ONCE A YEAR and MADE ONE PECK against this mountain. IT WOULD TAKE A GOOGLE NUMBER OF YEARS TO ERODE THAT MOUNTAIN TO SEA LEVEL!

Now let's apply this to the Bible numerics phenomenon. Going through the 20-point list above, what are the odds of these features in the Bible occurring by accident? Well, by the time we get to just Point 9, the odds of the listed phenomena occurring by chance have already blown out to GOOGLEPLEX.

The critic now has a world of explaining to do

I now challenge every critic of the Bible writings (and of Genesis in particular) to either:

- refute the evidence,
- repeat the phenomenon presented, or
- honestly admit defeat in overthrowing Genesis.

The critic may wish to shrug off this evidence. But he has a lot of explaining to do. If he was a cardiologist, all his patients would be dead.

22 Prophetic foreknowledge

ASTONISHING PROPHECIES COME TRUE

After the Flood, when Noah drank from the vines he had grown, it may have come as a surprise to him that under the new atmospheric conditions fresh juice fermented more readily.

Soon he was drunk. His son Ham, seeing the father's nakedness, neglected to cover him, but instead went and told his brothers. Respectfully backing toward their father, they covered his nakedness.

Genesis relates that *"When Noah woke from his wine, knowing how his youngest son had treated him, he exclaimed, Cursed be Canaan [**Ham's** family]; a servant of servants shall he be to his brothers. And he said, Blessed be the Lord, the God of **Shem** and Canaan shall be his servant. God shall enlarge **Japheth**, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant."* (Genesis 9:25-27)

Here is a 4,000 year old prophecy concerning the future of each of the main branches of the human race.

The initial family pattern set from three sons and their wives, gave rise in the course of time to three distinct racial stocks.

SHEM is represented by the Semitic people (Hebrews, Arabs, and ancient nations such as Babylonians, Assyrians, and so on). HAM is the progenitor of the Mongoloid and Negroid groups. JAPHETH is represented by the Caucasoids (Indo-Europeans).

Noah a prophet of God, divinely enlightened as to the future, foretold that:

PROPHECY 1:

Ham's descendants will become servants of the other two main branches of mankind. He will be "*a servant of servants to his brothers.*"

FULFILMENT: History shows that, to the benefit of the other branches of mankind, Ham's descendants became servants *par excellence*, pioneering the physical opening up of the world, subduing it and making it habitable. The negative aspect of the prophecy's fulfilment has been their frequent enslavement by the other races. Something else. Most basic technology to serve mankind was initially invented by the Mongoloid and Negroid branch of the human race, then added to and refined by the others. (See Arthur C. Custance, *Noah's Three Sons*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Zondervan Publishing House)

PROPHECY 2:

Japheth's descendants (the Indo-Europeans) will enjoy expansion, often at the expense of the others. "*God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant.*"

FULFILMENT: History shows that the Indo-Europeans have enjoyed expansion, establishing colonies, often at the expense of the others.

PROPHECY 3:

A branch of Shem's descendants are appointed to be a spiritual field of influence in the earth, representing the Lord God. "*Blessed be the Lord, the God of **Shem** and Canaan shall be his servant.*"

FULFILMENT: As time went on, they were commissioned to share with the world the divine oracles (the Scriptures, including Genesis), and given responsibility to demonstrate by right living the

blessings of a relationship with the Creator. This was intended to be a softening influence on the world's nations, to prepare the world to accept and benefit from the coming Messiah. What a power for good they could have been! How sad that they have defaulted on their opportunity!

As it has turned out, we have in these prophecies an astonishingly accurate summary of history right down to our day. (For a more detailed exposition of these three prophecies, see my book *The Corpse Came Back*, chapter 15.)

But there is more. Abraham had two sons, Ishmael (progenitor of the Arabs, born 1906 BC) and Isaac (ancestor of the Israelites, born 1893 BC). Prophecies were given concerning these sons and their descendants:

PROPHECY 4:

Concerning Isaac's descendants (the tribes of Israel): "*The Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other.*" (Deuteronomy 28:64) "*They shall be wanderers among the nations.*" (Hosea 9:17)

FULFILMENT: Today, wherever mankind is found, whether it be barbaric or highly civilized, there you will find the Jew. He is in every land and every race. We have all heard the expression "a wandering Jew".

PROPHECY 5:

Concerning the descendants of Ishmael (the Arabs): Unlike the tribes of Israel, who were to be scattered, Ishmael's descendants were to remain geographically close together. "*He shall dwell in the presence of his brethren.*" (Genesis 16:12)

FULFILMENT: And in this concentration of Middle Eastern Arabic tribes, the political entity called "Israel" stands out like a sore thumb.

PROPHECY 6:

The Arabs will become a great nation. *“I will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly... and I will make him a great nation.”* (Genesis 17:20)

FULFILMENT: The Arabs have become great and numerous.

PROPHECY 7:

The Arabs will be characterised by their “wild man” behaviour, leading a free and noble existence in the desert. *“And he will be a wild man.”* (Genesis 16:12)

FULFILMENT: Throughout the many centuries since, the Arabian Bedouin became well known for their adventurous and lawless nature. They were marked by their infamous repeated and violent acts of theft, robbery, pillage and murder against whomever they came into contact.

PROPHECY 8: Their hand will be contemptuously and continually set against their neighbours, and their neighbours’ hand, in turn, will also be set against them. *“His hand will be against every man, and every man’s hand against him.”* (Genesis 16:12)

FULFILMENT: They have earned for themselves a reputation for being a fierce, warlike people, hard to get along with. For nearly 4,000 years, this prophecy concerning Ishmael and his descendants has been fulfilled in a most remarkable way. *“His hand will be against everyone, and everyone’s hand against him”* similarly refers to this independent lifestyle. Ishmael's descendants have always resisted foreign domination. Also it is a reference to the hostility that has historically existed among the Arabs and between the Arabs and the other sons of Abraham.

The characteristics predicted in these last two prophecies affect the politics of the Middle East today.

Such prophetic accuracy is astonishing, to say the least. Let's face it. We humans can be sure of nothing even seconds ahead – just ask any horse punter.

However, someone behind the Bible makes this audacious claim: “So that you will know I am your Creator speaking to you, I shall now give you the game plan of history before it happens. Test it. Prove all things. Hold fast to that which is good.”

Since man can't predict world history centuries ahead, it should be self-evident that if we find a series of predictions and they take place precisely as foretold, then surely this is proof of a source that comes from beyond mankind.

The Bible claims that God selected holy men and revealed messages to them. As they wrote, they were under some mysterious control.

In the Bible, expressions such as “God said”, “the Lord commanded”, and “the word of the Lord” occur in the Bible more than 3,800 times.

The united wisdom of man can only guess. God alone knows with infallible certainty what is to come. Predictive prophecy establishes that there is a Divine Intellect behind Genesis. It establishes the fact of God.

Other prophecies in the Genesis document concern

- (a) Isaac's two sons, Jacob and Esau. (Gen.25:22-23) It was foretold that there would be endless war between them “*from generation to generation.*” (Exodus 17:16) Some scholars believe that many of today's Palestinians are largely descendants of the Amalekites.
- (b) each individual tribe of the nation of Israel. (Gen.49:1-28)
- (c) The future history of each.

Despite the posturing of critics, Genesis stands in a class by itself. What a remarkable book!

23 Genesis in our racial memory

7 FORGOTTEN SECRETS

Plato says that the Sophist Hippias of Elis “was able to repeat fifty names after hearing them only once.”

Pliny the Elder reports that Cyrus was able to name every man in his army, and that Lucius Scipio remembered the names of every person in the Roman Empire, and that one named Charmadas “recited by heart any book in the libraries.”

Seneca boasted of being able in his youth to repeat 2,000 names read to him “and recite in reverse order over two hundred verses his fellow students told him...” He did regard this as miraculous, however!

Although there may be some exaggeration here, it is a fact that oral recall was far more important in ancient societies than we have commonly allowed for.

Also, the techniques used for memorization by ancient societies as a whole have a remarkable similarity to techniques promulgated by today's “memory improvement” seminars we pay exorbitant fees to attend.

During the American Civil War, slaves who served as spies were able to collect incredibly detailed information, in large part because of their tradition of oral history. Their accuracy in remembering detail was because, not permitted to learn reading and writing, they listened carefully and relied totally on their memory as opposed to any written records.

Oral history has always been central to telling the story of World War II. Oral history has been used brilliantly to illuminate dimensions of the war experience inaccessible through printed sources.

Agreement among numerous isolated societies

Around the world, the common racial memory of mankind has handed down to us seven universal truths known to ancient man. Again, we discover that these are also encapsulated in the book of Genesis, as written history.

It would be appropriate for us to explore these in this chapter.

They are as follows:

- All was perfect in the beginning.
- Man was bathed in a garment of light.
- People were much larger in size than now.
- It was possible to live for hundreds of years.
- The first mother of the human race was deceived by an experience with a serpent in a tree.
- Man, having violated spiritual laws, became alienated from his Creator.
- The Creator promised that a Deliverer would come to rescue man from his dilemma, and restore everything that was lost.

These same elements are in the folklore of the world – even among nations and tribes that were not aware of each other.

You see, folklore is a fossil of history; it preserves history in the guise of colourful tales. Far from being a collection of fables, it is a recital of actual past events, even though from generation to generation some facts have become distorted or forgotten.

Legends are usually based on *a core of fact*.

Interestingly, these same seven features that are burned into the worldwide racial memory of mankind as real history, are likewise found recorded in the early chapters of Genesis.

It appears that these were universal truths, known to everyone in ancient times.

1. All was perfect in the beginning

Genesis says, “*And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good.*” (Gen.1:31)

There was a Golden Age, said the Greeks, an age when human beings lived with no evil desires, when they lived without guilt or crime.

The same idea was echoed in India. The *Mahabharata*, an epic poem containing the history of the world, says that in the First Age there was no disease, hatred or evil.

The Chinese likewise recall that First Age as one of perfect harmony. Their familiar saying goes thus: “In the beginning, man’s original character was virtuous.”

Even the native Americans speak of an Age of a First People who were happy and at peace with each other. All food was plentiful, with no need to plant or work to get food.

It was a beautiful world. An age in which there was *no suffering* at all.

You know as well as I do, that this racial memory is very different from the evolution theory, which wants us to believe that the sordid and wasteful mechanism of evolution (embodying tooth and claw, painful upward struggle) was used to produce mankind.

There are some who suggest the Creator Himself may have used evolution to produce mankind. If that story is true, then God was a “cruel Creator”. You cannot call Him a God of love. No way!

It is interesting to discover that an increasing number of scientists are turning away from the evolution theory, convinced that there is not a shred of evidence to support it.

In any case, our global racial memory, as well as Genesis itself, are in agreement that all was perfect in the beginning.

Among some of the earliest records unearthed are those written by the ancient Sumerians of Mesopotamia, more than 4,000 years ago. Preserved in their records are their laws, history and culture, as well as stories concerning events that had occurred before their time.

Their writings speak vividly of a time when animals were neither wild nor harmful, when there was no rivalry or enmity among men, when there was plenty, security, harmony, and right living on earth, everywhere. (S.N. Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*. Philadelphia, Frontispiece. For corrections made after additional fragments of the same story were found, see Kramer, *Journal of the American Oriental Society*, vol. 88, 1968, p. 109)

This same memory was inherited by other cultures. Archaeologists are coming to respect racial memory as based upon original *fact*.

OUR MAKER'S GIFT TO US

Our ancestors – yours and mine – held that the Creator had fashioned a paradise world, and appointed man to look after it. And mankind was given laws – both physical and spiritual – to ensure his unending happiness. Violate them and misery would follow.

Our first parents were also endowed with free choice.

And so, for a while, all was perfect harmony, peace and joy. Until the day they chose the deadly experiment of rebellion, turning their backs on their Creator... and the death process began.

2. People were of larger size

“There were giants in the earth in those days.” (Gen. 6:4)

The ancient world was able to support animal and plant life of fantastic size and numbers.

This is what the fossil remains tell us:

1. There was a wider and more even distribution of plant and animal life.
2. There was a greater variety of plants and animals than now.
3. Organisms were of a greater size and quality.

Yes, there has been a distinct deterioration of today's animals and plants compared with the same organisms in fossil form.

Fossil remains show that all terrestrial life has decreased in size. The largest members of the animal kingdom are either becoming extinct, or shrinking as if touched by a magic wand.

Mammals were often twice the size of their current counterparts. Here are some examples:

- kangaroos as large as hippopotamuses, with skulls 3 feet long
- horses that left 13 inch (32 cm) fossil hoof marks
- koalas as big as rhinos
- elephants with tusks 14 feet (4 m) long
- sheep as big as today's horses
- boars as large as hippopotamuses
- baboons 13 feet (4 metres) tall
- rhinos about 17 feet high and nearly 30 feet long

Recent discoveries suggest that the ancient world had 30 percent oxygen in its atmosphere, against today's 20 percent. When oxygen concentration increases it encourages gigantism.

From all over the globe, skeletons, artefacts, fossil footprints, houses and tombs speak of a vanished world of massive men and women, to whom very little must have seemed forbidding; people who, born to an incredible lifespan, pursued from strength to strength almost limitless goals. The superiority, the nobility, of this race, we their descendants have all but forgotten. (Jonathan Gray, *The Lost World of Giants*. <http://www.beforeus.com/shopcart_ebooks.html>)

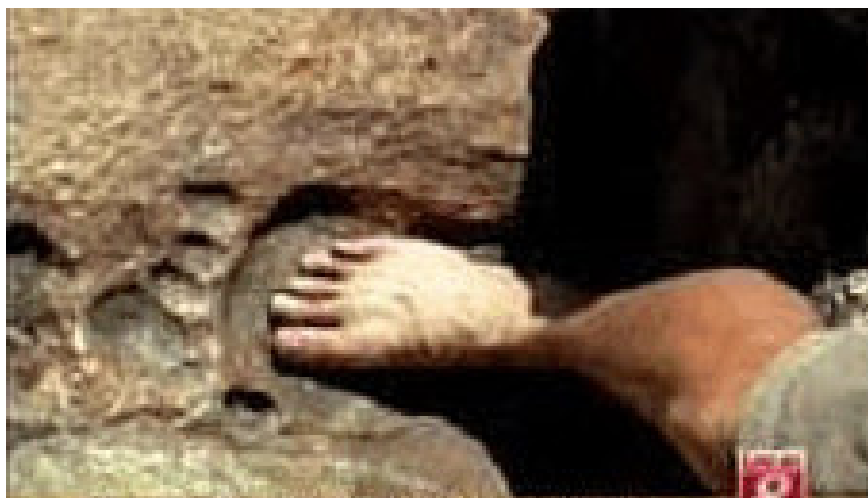
The global disaster known as the Great Flood changed all this. Yet for some time even after the Flood, gigantism continued to a limited extent.

Well-known zoologist Ivan T. Sanderson, who was also a frequent guest on Johnny Carson's *Tonight Show* in the 1960s, received a letter from an engineer who was stationed on Shemya Island in the Aleutians during World War II. While bulldozing for a new airstrip, his crew discovered under several layers of sediment a graveyard of gigantic human remains.

Admitted English scientist Alfred Russell Wallace: "It is quite clear, therefore, that we live in a zoologically impoverished world, from which all the hugest and fiercest and strangest forms have disappeared." (Immanuel Velikovsky, *Earth in Upheaval*, p.206)



Found in Turkey - the giant leg bone of a man before the Flood who was about 15 feet tall.



The above footprint is of a man who was about 15 feet tall.

Darwin was astonished to discover that “now we find mere pigmies compared with the antecedent allied races.” (Sir Henry Howarth, *The Mammoth and the Flood*, p.351)

Darwin, though hesitating to accept that the situation was changed by a great world catastrophe, could offer no satisfactory solution.

3. People lived for hundreds of years

“And all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years: and he died.” (Gen.5:5)

OBJECTION: Oh, you can’t take that literally. “Years” has to mean “months”. So divide 930 by 12 and you get 77 to 78 years. That’s more realistic.

IN REALITY: Nice try. But it really makes nonsense of the passage as a whole. What will you do with statements such as these?:

- * “And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begat a son...” (Genesis 5:3) Now, 130 divided by 12 equals about 11. So are we to take it that Adam, at age eleven, had a son?
- * “And Enos lived ninety years [90 months?] and begat Cainan.” (v.9) He became a father at 7½ years?
- * “And Cainan lived seventy years” (70 months?) and had a son. Did he become a father before he was six years old?

The critics seem to have a cavalier way with logic.

It should be noted that the memory of past long life in mankind is found in nearly all traditional writings. The best known, of course, is Genesis. It states very plainly that early man enjoyed a life expectancy of over 900 years

It is difficult to conceive of anything like this today; it is much easier to be skeptical.

Nevertheless, everything in the “pre-Flood” environment favoured the continued production of larger, stronger, longer-lived specimens of every type of creature. The fossil record confirms this picture.

Furthermore, accounts of man once living to a great age occur in the folklore and traditions of almost every ancient race. Egypt, Syria, Persia, India and Greece all possess traditions of a long-lived race during a previous age.

- Theopompus (c.378-300 B.C.) stated that a now sunken land was inhabited by men of gigantic size who lived twice as long as now.
- A Transylvanian gipsy tradition relates that “there was a time when men lived forever and when neither worry nor sickness troubled them. Meat and fruits existed in abundance, and the rivers flowed with milk and wine. Men and animals lived happy lives and were without fear of death.” Then came a worldwide Flood.
- Flavius Josephus, Jewish historian, cited earlier historians who claimed “that the ancients lived a thousand years.”
- The Chibchas of Peru have a legend of a hero who lived for 2,000 years.
- The people of Yunnan, China, have preserved the memory of an age when all were prosperous and lived hundreds of years.
- The Greeks and Romans suggested ages of 800 to 1,000 years (reminding us of the biblical figures).

If we are to believe that such records are based on **a core of truth**, then something dramatic must have happened. What changed the situation?

Since this change occurred, the average life span of mankind has remained relatively constant over the past 3,000 years, though on rare occasions, certain individuals may live considerably longer.

- In eastern India, even in historical times, there were people who lived 400 years, according to Pliny and Solinus.
- In the Hebrides Islands, west of Scotland, there existed the custom of putting to death those who, after 150 to 200 years, had become so decrepit, that they were considered useless.
- In 1933, the *New York Times* announced the death of Professor Li Chung Yun who, born in 1677, had attained his 256th birthday. Those who saw him claimed he did not appear older than 52! He had outlived 23 wives and was living with his 24th at the time.
- In 1956, Mrs Maria Garson Viuda de Castaneda of Cucunuba produced a birth certificate in Bogota, Columbia,

showing she was born December 30, 1778. Medical evidence supported her claim to be 177.

- As recently as 2003, the *Guardian* newspaper (United Kingdom) announced that a woman at least 124 years old had been found in the war-torn republic of Chechnya. Zabani Khachukayeva's passport stated that she was 124 years old. Doctors, however, believed she might be even older. Apart from having impaired hearing, she was declared to be in relatively good health and said that she still felt energetic. This woman, Khachukayeva, had outlived her eldest son, who died in 2001, and enjoyed 24 grandchildren, 38 great-grandchildren, and 7 great-great-grandchildren.

There you go. It is possible to live to 120 years of age free from disease and still retain all of your faculties! Have you ever wondered how these people who live a long time in good health usually come from poor parts of the world and do not have the benefit of the so called 'health' system that we have in the Western world? Maybe they can thank the lack of exposure to modern pharmaceutical drugs for their long life? What do you think?

Western scientists question such claims, including those found in the Bible. Judgment is made on present day experience and birth records of this century - the oldest age on record verified with certainty being around 120 years. Yet 17th- to 19th century historical records discussed in textbooks on gerontology (the study of old age) are replete with ages of up to 188 years, in Europe.

- The oldest living person in 1973 was claimed to be Shirali MislMOV. He was living at Barzavu in Azerbaijan on the Iranian border. His age was alleged to be 167.

Nevertheless, American scientists refused to believe it. One can only assess local records and testimonies. There is no other way to measure a person's absolute age.

- I recall a news report of another man in that general region who was said to be 165 years old. He had not spoken to his son for 20 years, because the naughty 143 year old youngster had married a woman of whom Dad did not approve!

But if scientists can't believe people who are still living today, how will they ever believe people who lived thousands of years ago?

***PERHAPS WE SHOULD BE SKEPTICAL
EVEN OF OUR SKEPTICISM?***

Until recent years, such figures might well be regarded as absurd. However, today's medical standards and investigations of this question have reached a point where such claims can no longer be totally ignored, nor denied with a certainty that permits no doubt of any kind.

It can be said confidently that there is now historical evidence to support the Genesis account and no scientific reasons for doubting it.

The fact that we do not now live for 800 to 900 years does not mean that such longevity was never possible.

WHAT SOME SCIENTISTS SAY

There are scientists who readily accept longer life as a reality.

The truth is that there is no biological reason why human beings die at the comparatively early age of 60 to 70 years. Separated cell tissues have been kept alive under suitable conditions **for an indefinite period.**

US scientist Dr Patrick Flanagan reported to author Alan Landsburg:

We've had cells taken from the human body live in a nutrient solution inside a pyramid shape **NINE TIMES THEIR NORMAL LIFE SPAN.**" (Alan and Sally Landsburg, *The Outer Space Connection*. London: Transworld Publishers, Ltd., 1975, p.148. Emphasis added)

Experiments on human fibroblasts conducted by Dr Hayflick showed fifty population doublings to be the limit of cellular life. When other experimenters added Vitamin E to the nutrient solution, the life span of the cultures was more than doubled. (*Ibid.*, p.148)

Professor Gennady Bardyshev, writing in the newspaper *Sovietskaya Rossiya*, foresees the possibility of man living for 200 years. He said

experiments showed that by adding flat-fish fats to animal fodder, it was possible to increase animals' life span by 15 to 20 percent.

Dr Linus C. Pauling, world-renowned chemist, winner of two Nobel prizes and one of the most original thinkers of our time, states: "Death is unnatural.... Theoretically, man is quite immortal. His body tissues replace themselves. He is a self-repairing machine. And yet he gets old and dies, and the reasons for this are still a mystery." (*Ibid.*, p.121)

Dr Alex Comfort, director of research in gerontology at University College, London, adds his opinion: "If we kept throughout life the same resistance to stress, injury and disease that we had at the age of ten, about one half of us here today might expect to survive in 700 years' time." (*Ibid.*, p.121)

"LIVE TO BE 1,000," says a Cambridge scientist in an article in *BBC News Online*, 3 Dec 2004. Geneticist Aubrey de Grey claims a project named Strategies for Engineered Negligible Senescence will be able to "repair all the types of molecular and cellular damage that happen to us over time."

De Grey is confident of his claim because some of the repair methods needed have already been developed and are undergoing clinical trials, and others are based on technologies that already exist but need to be applied to the problem of ageing. Parts of the project should be working in mice within 10 years and it may only take another 10 to be working in humans. On the basis of these developments, de Grey thinks the first person to live to be 1,000 may already be 60.

Says Dr Hans Selys, Director of the Institute of Experimental Surgery of Montreal University: "Medicine has assembled a fund of knowledge that will now serve, I believe, as a point of departure for studying the causes of old age. If the causes of ageing can be found, there is no good medical reason to believe that it will not be possible for science to find some practical way of slowing the process down, or even bringing it to a standstill." (Hans Selys, "Is Ageing Curable?" *Science Digest*, Vol.46, December 1959, p.1)

"Someday we may live almost indefinitely." So said Dr Bernard Strehler, a biologist at the University of Southern California, according to *Newsweek*.

So much for what some scientists have been saying.

WHEN DID WE LOSE IT?

According to Genesis, something extremely significant happened to the earth and to man at the time of the Great Flood. Whatever it was, it probably removed the dominant factor for long life.

One factor may well have been that the water-vapour canopy was no longer there to absorb dangerous cosmic radiation and man had begun to suffer an increased rate of mutation of the genetic material in the cells of his body.

The effect accumulated over succeeding generations, and, together with the generally harder way of life, as well as an impoverished soil (most nutriments had been leached out during the Flood and redeposited in the oceans) has ensured a steady decline in man's life span.

Over a number of generations the decline continued until a new life span was reached, now a mere tenth of its span before the Deluge.

And the widespread racial memory of mankind is in perfect agreement with the book of Genesis. We are dealing here with reliable information... historical fact.

4. Our first mother was enticed through a serpent in a tree.

The first man and woman had been appointed custodians over this planet.

But an intruder appeared on the scene... one, who with his rebel forces, had been cast out of his original home in the heavens.

According to many knowledgeable sources, ancient and modern, there is an unseen dimension that interacts with our own. And when all known phenomena on this planet are taken into account, it does make sense.

You have heard of Lucifer (otherwise known as Satan)?

According to ancient records, when the first man and woman, a race inferior to him, were granted dominion, something Lucifer had lost, his anger exploded into implacable rage. With envy and a burning sense of unjustly injured pride, he now had a new object for his hatred. His only miserable consolation now was to wreak vengeance upon these new

subjects of the Creator. It was to become a long test of strength and power.

According to the Genesis account, one day, as the woman wandered among the trees, she saw a beautiful snake in the tree eating fruit. And suddenly it spoke! (Or appeared to.)

It was a trick! Whether the wily Lucifer made the serpent appear to speak, much as does a ventriloquist, with his doll... or whether it became a possessed medium, as in a seance... or whether Lucifer, a spirit being, actually materialised in the form of a serpent, is not the crucial fact. Something happened.

In any case, in this captivating disguise, he raised doubts concerning their Maker. “*Yea, hath God said...?*” (Gen.3:1) Then he offered something “better”. And, although warned, our first parents fell for his shrewd ploy. “Go it alone,” he urged. “Be independent. You don’t need God.”

Liberation. Sounds nice. So Lucifer deceived them, led them to rebel against their Creator, then, having overcome them as custodians, took over the planet.

According to some archaeologists, the oldest piece of art known to the human family is one termed the Temptation Seal. This pictures a tree, on the opposite sides of which are seated two persons. Behind one of them is the upright form of a *serpent*, who is whispering to one of them.



The Temptation Seal (British Museum)

A Sumerian poem laments that “the maiden ate that which was forbidden, the maiden, the mother of sin, committed evil; the mother of sin had a painful experience.” (Alfred Jeremias, *Das Alte Testament im Lichte des Alten Orients*, 4th ed. Leipzig: 1930, p.99)

We encounter this same image of the eating of a forbidden fruit among some African tribes, the Nepalese, the Burmese and others.

Mankind’s entrapment by the “*evil serpent*” was remembered from Egypt to China to the Americas. (W.H. Prescott, *Conquest of Mexico*, vol. 1. London: J.M. Dent and Sons Ltd., 1948, p. 380)

Similarly, the Hindu Krishna sat under a banyon tree upon a coiled *serpent* and bestowed spiritual knowledge upon the human race.

The Persians recalled a region of bliss called Heden, before the first humans were tempted by the evil spirit in the form of a *serpent* to take the fruit of the forbidden tree. (Heden is recognisable as the biblical Eden.)

The Mexican version of the event involves a great male *serpent*.

Likewise the Greeks recalled the Garden of the Hesperides where grew a tree which bore the golden apples of immortality, the garden being protected by a *dragon*.

And the Chinese, in their sacred books, remembered a garden in which grew trees which bore the fruit of immortality, and this garden was guarded by a *winged serpent called a dragon*.

As I write this, I have before me a photograph of a petroglyph on an Arizona cliff face. One can clearly see the *snake* (with its mouth open) striking at the man (the Deliverer promised in Genesis 3:15), with the two people (Adam and Eve) in the background looking on. The petroglyph is believed by the Navajo to have been carved by the very ancient Anasazi (the Elders) who once lived in the area.

In the historical chants of the Lenni-Lenapi, the tribe that originally dwelt along North America’s Delaware River, is the story of the Creation, the Golden Age and the Fall, in these words:

All were willingly pleased, all were easy thinking, and all were well-happified. But after a while [came] the *snake-*

worship (Initako) of the god of the snakes, Wakon. And there came wickedness, crime, and unhappiness. And bad weather was coming, distemper was coming, with death was coming. All this happened very long ago, at the first land, Netamaki.(C.S. Rafinesque, *The American Nations*, quoted from Egerton Sykes, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World*. A modern, revised edition of Ignatius Donnelly's book. New York: Gramercy Publishing Company, Harper & Rowe, ch. 9, p. 91)

We could go on. But you get the picture. Over and over, we see this racial memory of the past.

THE SNAKE BECAME HIS SYMBOL

Stories from the ancient past are cross corroborative.

Racial memory of someone called Satan, or the “Devil” is very much the same around the globe. It has been recognized in just about every culture in history.

And the *serpent*, *snake* or *dragon* came to be regarded as his symbol.

5. The garment of light vanished

The book of Genesis tells us that after Adam and Eve had violated the divine law, they suddenly discovered that they were naked. “*And they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: And Adam and Eve hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden.*” (Gen. 3:7,8)

You can read the whole story in Genesis chapter 3. It is very sad.

You might ask, Why only now? Why weren't they aware of their naked state before this?

The answer is that they were ***clothed with*** a glory of ***visible light*** perhaps similar to that with which their Creator communicated Himself to them.

Bathed in a beautiful garment of light, they did not appear naked to themselves or to each other.

The Creator's glory would then have no ill effect on the two. It was only when they first rebelled against their Maker, that this cover of glory quickly began to fade, revealing to their startled eyes their now naked bodies.

And suddenly their guilt weighed upon them. They wanted to cover themselves, to hide, possibly realising that they would no longer survive in His presence.

Until the Fall, there was a perfect state of union between the people and their Creator.

They had known nothing about evil. And their Maker had desired they should never know evil. But they had chosen – and evil they would know.

But there was also another dreadful result of this loss of their glorious covering. Their bodies would no longer be protected from the effects of external forces and the entrance of disease. They had lost their immunity which was provided by their 'glory' covering. In other words, they had now commenced to die.

This tragic event was burned into the memory of their descendants. A *basic quality* underlying all the Paradise myths of the ancient races was the *divine presence*. God was walking on the earth, according to the Bible. God was speaking to people through their hearts, according to the native Americans.

The myths of mankind are in agreement with the book of Genesis. The folklore of the human race again and again says that the First People glowed with visible light. But that this visible "aura" or robe of light vanished when mankind fell.

6. Man became alienated from God

Would it surprise you to learn that nearly all writings of ancient peoples worldwide tell the same story, that of *a fall* from this original paradise state of peace, love and happiness?

Sacred records affirmed that there had been a departure from harmony with the Creator. Such accounts are in the oral and written history of many ancient nations.

The “Fall” as it was termed, became fixed in our racial memory. In many traditions this “Fall” is described as the origin of our sense of separateness, our sense of being alienated and at odds with each other.

Up to that time, our first parents had lived in innocence. They were able to commune direct with their Maker. But wrong-doing marred this harmony. It biased them against the divine law and defiled them. From now on they and the entire human race would no longer enjoy that luxury.

ALIENATED AND DYING

There was no escaping their guilt. They were aware that their Maker had surrounded them with evidences of His love, yet they had listened to the enemy’s slander – and doubted the Creator’s integrity. They had failed Him.

Now that they were separated from the Life-Giver, the natural consequence would be death. From that day, the process of dying commenced within their bodies, cell by cell. This process would be passed on to all their descendants.

Lucifer had won the first round. Man was now in his grasp, alienated from his Creator.

What would the Creator do now?

Two things.

(a) LIMIT OUR LIFE SPAN

Firstly, a limit was placed on the human life span. The race was now subject to *the curse of death*. And this would affect the whole planet.

How could a good God institute such a penalty, you ask? Answer: to limit pain. Yes, He knew what He was doing. Even today, so much evil is messing up the world from men and women with brief life spans –up to

the day they die. If we were to live forever, this world might well have been destroyed *by us* long ago.

It was an act of mercy for the Creator to bar them from endless life. If He had not done so, and they had continued to live without end, they would gradually have become more and more ill as time passed. Then no matter how agonising their illness became, they would have still lived on with no possibility of any release from their suffering. Death, then, became an act of mercy on the part of the Great Designer. It was the only way to limit their suffering.

Can you see it? Death was necessary – to place a limitation on the pain that was about to come... pain resulting from mankind's choice to sever himself from God.

Just ask yourself. Isn't this desire to live without God a mark of our society today? Don't we want to decide our own destiny and not answer to a Higher Power? Problem. We still die. We cannot escape that.

Yes, this is real – just as Genesis claims. Our life spans have been limited.

RACIAL MEMORY OF THE FALL

As it turned out, this painful experience suffered by our first parents became etched in our racial memory.

From Sumeria to the Americas, art and literature recorded the event of the Fall. In China, Egypt and Babylonia, indeed among all peoples, this tragedy is the oldest racial memory – from the beginning of history.

The loss of immortality caused by man's violation of spiritual law seems to have been keenly felt by more than one ancient writer. (For example, the *Adapa Myth* and the *Gilgamesh Epic*. A translation of the *Adapa Myth* made by E.A. Speiser is found in J.B. Pritchard, ed., *Ancient Near East Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 3rd ed. Princeton, N.J., 1969, pp. 101-103. A translation of the *Gilgamesh Epic* made by Speiser is found in *Ancient Near East Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, pp. 72-79. See especially, pp. 88,90,96.)

Many prayers and hymns of the ancients impressively reveal how these people clearly understood the principles of the biblical Ten Commandments and knew quite well what was right and wrong. (Jonathan Gray, *Ark of the Covenant*, page 56. <<http://www.beforeus.com/abook.html>>)

They were fully conscious of their rebellious condition and were longing for forgiveness. One prayer of an ancient penitent may serve as an example:

O my god, who art angry, accept my prayer;
 O my goddess, who art angry, receive my supplication,
 Receive my supplication and let thy spirit be at rest.
 O my goddess, look with pity on me and accept my
 supplication.
 Let my sins be forgiven, let my transgressions be blotted
 out.
 Let the ban be torn away, let the bonds be loosened.
 Let the seven winds carry away my sighs.
 I will send away my wickedness,
 Let the bird bear it to the heavens.
 Let the flowing waters of the river wash me clean. (L.W.
 King, *Babylonian Religion and Mythology*. London: 1899, p. 212)

Although the people who wrote this had by that time slipped into polytheism, they realised their true spiritual condition.

In ancient Babylon, man was felt to live under a curse, a spell, from which only a divine act of cleansing could free him.

Egyptian writings reveal a similar understanding: that the people were aware of a condition of wrong doing, that they had a longing for eternal life and even felt a need for some kind of rescue.

Disobedience had marred the original harmony. And, since the Fall, human nature had become so weakened through habitual wrong-doing that it was impossible in one's own strength to resist the power of the Lucifer Legion.

The first man and woman had been appointed custodians over this planet. But now the Legion of Lucifer had taken over the world.

Here is the reason for the mess this world is now in. It is rebellion against our Creator.

Wrong-doing (sin) will kill you. It will leave you feeling empty and lonely inside.

But here is the good news.

(b) ULIMATE RESTORATION

The Creator's second response to man's desperate need was *a promise of hope and rescue*.

7. The promise: a Deliverer will restore what was lost.

As we all know, our world has become a terrible mess. And one may very well ask, If there is a Creator who cares about His subjects, then **why doesn't He stamp out wrong... and stop all this suffering?** If such a Mighty One did create DNA, then could He not stop the suffering?

He could. But consider this. If He were to stamp out evil now, He would do a **complete** job. Suppose our Maker were to decree that at midnight tonight **all** wrong was to be removed from the universe – who of us would still be here after midnight?

Very well, then. What was the Creator's solution? It was the most dramatic, costly and effective remedy possible.

THE PROMISED RESCUE

We discover that there was not only communication, but a promise of rescue - to inspire fallen mankind with hope.

Where the human race was now stuck in a swamp of despair and rebellion, the Creator's mercy would intervene. He would not let them remain in a hopeless condition. He would send a Rescuer and enable humans to remedy their plight.

The book of Genesis states that when Adam and his wife, the progenitors of the human race, fell from innocence, the Creator promised that someone termed "the seed of the woman" was coming to challenge and destroy the hijacker. (Genesis 3:15)

Later, the whole pagan world would preserve this cryptic prophecy in its legends.

Nearly all Jewish commentators, with isolated exceptions, receive this as real history, and agree that the prophecy was messianic in character.

One Jewish source comments:

The Messiah shall restore the good state of the universe which is disturbed by the fall of man. (*Bereshith Rabba*, Ch. xii; *Bamidbar Rabba*, ch.xiii; Targum, Jer. i on Gen.3:15)

Over the course of 4,000 years, additional prophecies, 300 or more of them, would fill in the details - including the coming Deliverer's name... as well as the names of some of his ancestors... the town where he would be born... what he would accomplish... how he would die, and so on. Even the very time of his appearance. (Jonathan Gray, *Ark of the Covenant*. <<http://www.beforeus.com/abook.html> >)

Gradually, more information is received concerning this coming person. One discovers that the simple outlines of the first cryptic prophecy become progressively more detailed as some Supreme Mind inspires different writers in succession. Each new prophet is like a painter who uses the brush to put in details – until at last the word painting is finished and the full picture of the coming Deliverer stands out perfect and complete.

Yes, if you didn't know it, the whole life story of this Promised One – including the precise time he would appear – was written down hundreds of years in advance.

Messages received by the prophets were recorded in a document that we know as the Old Testament. Evidently, the Creator loved mankind so much that He was setting out to win their obstinate and self-centered hearts.

The whole human race knew of this coming Messiah. In fact, some nations, as their cultures degenerated, retained the seed of this prophecy within their pagan mythology. And today we find it echoed quite grotesquely. But the core of the original prophecy given to our first parents is still perceptible. (Jonathan Gray, *Stolen Identity*. <<http://www.beforeus.com/stolen-id.php> >)

***WHAT THE RESCUE OFFER
CAN MEAN TO EACH OF US
PERSONALLY***

I am going to insert something here that is not necessary to our theme, but which I believe is so important that it should be considered.

The Creator is not just some unreachable, unknowable, impersonal force, but a living, all powerful, all knowing, all wise and all loving Personal Being.

His initiative in providing personal rescue from eternal death for each of us who will choose to accept it is a tremendously generous offer.

Unlike that of the New World Order planners, the Creator's plan is not forced upon anyone... the choice to accept it or to spit in His face is left to each of us individually.

All He asks is that we accept His gift as free, turn from our rebellious attitude, then allow His Spirit to gradually transform our hearts until we are living in harmony with His wishes – which are good for us and for everyone around us, anyway.

No person on earth is so unlovable or evil or ugly that our Creator won't stoop down to help that one.

We are loved when we are unlovable.

And immediately we start responding to His call:

- We are counted right when we are not right.
- We are accepted when we are unacceptable.
- We are declared perfect while we are being perfected.
- We are rewarded first - now perform!

And He *provides the power* to succeed! What generosity! What love! It has won *me* over.

So many similarities

Now for a final comparison of Genesis with our worldwide racial

memories. And what do we find? That the points of agreement are too many to brush aside.

Common sense tells us that these are rooted in real history.

Historically true

So does any skeptic still want to tell us that Genesis is not historically true? Then you have not taken in the case.

You need to go back and this time read carefully, with an honest, open mind

- * chapter 6 – about the global Flood which truly did occur - and even at the very time Genesis says it did.
- * chapter 7 – about the dispersion of languages from a single global language – and from the very region specified in Genesis.
- * chapter 14 – about the five fabled lost cities destroyed by burning balls of sulphur from the sky – and now confirmed by archaeology.

And those are just three examples. If you're really looking for the truth, you'll find plenty more in earlier chapters of this book. I submit to you that there is evidence sufficient to convince every honest skeptic.

Yes, I know. Some critics will not be happy with these findings. Yet, if their claim of objectivity holds, they should follow the evidence to where it leads and not to where they *want* it to go.

A producer told an actor who didn't like a script, "Don't let your opinion sway your better judgment."

Finale:

THE WEAPON THE GLOBALISTS FEAR

Here it comes... and it strikes the New World Order plans right between the eyes. This is why these entrenched stooges of Lucifer fear - and hate - the Genesis document so much. It undermines their plans.

They have been fiercely attacking it for years.

* * * * *

“In fifteen years I’ll have this book in the morgue,” announced Robert Ingersoll, the noted atheist, holding up a copy of the Bible. Fifteen years rolled by. Ingersoll was in the morgue. And the Bible lives on.

Francois Voltaire, the French atheist, said that in 100 years the Bible would be an outmoded and forgotten book, to be found only in museums. When the 100 years were up, Voltaire’s house was owned and used by the Geneva Bible Society.

Does someone up there have a sense of humour?

By the way, a French nurse who attended Voltaire when he died was asked to take another critical case of a man who would probably die.

She enquired, “Is he a Christian?”

“Yes,” was the reply. “But why do you ask?”

“Because,” she responded, “I was the nurse who attended Voltaire in his last illness. And for all the wealth of Europe I would not see another unbeliever die.”

Just think about this. Here's a book that, more than any other, has been banned... burned... blasted by critics. So many have had a go at banning it down through the centuries. Under the Roman Empire, peoples' houses were searched, the occupants were threatened and even killed. This intensified through the Middle Ages under the reign of a corrupt church. This attack is being stepped up in many countries today – even in the West.

In Soweto, a woman was burned to death for selling Bibles. Car tyres were placed around her and set alight. “We don't like what you are doing,” said the atheistic agitators.

Here is a book that is scientifically sound, historically reliable, and undented by the missiles of the critics. And it is still up there as the best selling and most widely read book on the planet. Why?

Few books can stand many readings. But, to put it bluntly, this book is inexhaustible. It will stand a thousand readings. And the man who has gone over it the most frequently and the most carefully is the surest of finding new wonders there.

I submit to you that this book is entitled to the first and highest place among the books that you read, believe and love.

The weapon the Globalists fear

Then what is so dangerous about the Bible – and in particular the book of Genesis?

Simply this: the Genesis document is itself a missile that hits the New World Order agenda right between the eyes.

Why do those greedy, corrupt destroyers hate Genesis so much?

- For one thing, they are in the act of setting up *a one world government*, and Genesis says that will fail. The Tower of Babel incident is an historical precedent. (See Gen.11:1-9)

- For another, they want to ***get rid of*** – yes, even slaughter – ***most of the human race*** so that they can enjoy their worldwide Utopia. And what does Genesis say about that? “*Whoso sheddeth man’s blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made he man.*” (Gen.9:6) You’re an intelligent person. You know what that means. They consider Genesis a book that is subversive to their plans.
- Thirdly, it states loudly that this planet belongs to God, who created it, not to man. And He has set in motion spiritual laws that they must obey. Defy them, and you lose. God has the final say, not man. Genesis is not on the side of the Globalists.
- Fourthly, we might mention the insistence in Genesis that every living thing is to reproduce “*after its kind*”. This rules out cross genetic manipulation. Genesis records that one of the reasons for God’s interruption of history when He brought the Great Flood was that man and beast were corrupted. (Gen.6:12) Genetic corruption is a favourite game of the globalist lackies like Monsanto. They are determined to force hybridisation and genetically modified food upon us, whether we like it or not. Again, the Globalists and Genesis clash head on.
- Fifthly, Genesis is a spiritual powerhouse. When people take it into their hearts, they become empowered, invincible, unafraid. The Globalists don’t want a strong, fearless, informed population. They want you to be subdued and submissive, while they activate their satanic plans for mass murder. Yes, Genesis is a major threat.

The amazing “weapon” discovery

You will recall that in Chapter 21 we discovered a complex “sevens” code to be embedded in every conceivable way throughout the Genesis document. After reading this, a Jewish man, Michael Korn, drew my attention to an absolutely amazing fact.

He emailed me:

Concerning the pattern of 7 you demonstrate in your book, *The Weapon the Globalists Fear*, it is very interesting to

note that 7 is represented by the Hebrew letter zayin ז, which means **weapon** or male sexual organ, which is the organ of procreation. Thus we see that the human instrument of Genesis, or progenation, the male organ, represented by the number 7, is embedded throughout this first book of the Bible!

Did you catch the significance of that?

1. God created mankind to procreate - to fill the earth as guardians of His creation (Genesis 1:28). This is the opposite from the globalist plan to kill most people on earth.
2. Then the Creator masterfully wove this **sevens code** (ז), in every conceivable way throughout the Genesis document. And *why*?
 - * firstly as a fingerprint sign – sealing Genesis (meaning “beginnings”) as the authentic record of origins (impossible for any human to have composed), and
 - * secondly stamping the Genesis document as *The Weapon*. That’s right... the WEAPON!

We thought of many possible titles. Yet, when naming this present work *The Weapon the Globalists Fear*, I was unaware that the sign for “seven” (zayin - ז) actually means “*weapon*”.

An amazing coincidence? Or **not** a coincidence? What do you think?

Can you see why it is the target of sustained attacks! Evidence for or against Genesis has nothing to do with it. This is a spiritual battle... It is all out war... between the forces of good and evil. Genesis is the ultimate weapon in the coming final showdown for the sovereignty of Planet Earth.

Now, please get this into your head. The Creator loves what He has made – and that means you and me. So at the darkest hour of history will be triggered a rescue operation for those who are ready.

I’m not guessing. The book tells us this is going to happen. And when it says that, you can believe it. It’s a book that comes direct from our Creator. You’ve seen evidence for that in Chapter 21.

Lucifer, the boss of the mob that hijacked this planet and set up human stooges to run it, will be brought down, along with his stooges. Ever since

man was created and given dominion over this world (Genesis 1:28), Lucifer has harboured an insatiable hatred toward the human race. He wants to pull it down to destruction. And he has inspired the Globalists to wipe out as many as possible.

The monsters intentionally working this scheme have said over and over that there would be a pandemic, that it could be any time. The Powers That Kill decided some time ago that there were simply too many of us “Useless Eaters” and they have concocted several schemes to accomplish the culling to get rid of what the US government, the UN, WHO and others have decided is “necessary” for a sustainable planet: 80-90 percent of us *dead*.

They plan to achieve this through wars, AIDS, mass vaccination, depleted uranium, plague, and any other deadly means that will work.

The recent swine flu virus is a “strange brew” of swine flu, avian flu and human flu. Such “strange brews” do not occur by themselves. They occur in *laboratories* where mad men/women and their murderous gutless, spineless technicians and helpers assist them.

What’s coming

Good news. Our Creator is not taken by surprise. May I say this about the prophecies in the Bible? Hundreds of them have already been fulfilled. They challenge us with their accuracy. So you can believe those which are still to occur.

The Bible has pre-warned us of man destroying the earth (Revelation 11:18), of ravaging plagues (Matthew 24:7; Revelation ch.16), and of an ultimate financial collapse. (Revelation 18:15-17. James 5:1-3)

“They shall cast their silver in the streets, and their gold shall be removed: their silver and their gold shall not be able to deliver them in the day of the wrath of the Lord.” (Ezekiel 7:19)

Then, when least expected, the Deliverer appears – the very one promised in the book of Genesis. And these stooges who have destroyed the earth flee in terror to their underground bunkers as they see Him coming. (Rev. 6:15-17) Not that that will help them. The King of kings and Lord of lords is taking over.

Could it be that we are on the verge of the greatest time of trouble this earth has ever seen? Look out for book two of this Genesis trilogy, titled *Will You Survive?*

In any case, here is the good news: The Creator's rescue operation includes a plan for your life – if you choose to accept it – in a world totally restored to its original paradise state.

The restored earth will be granted to men and women who are cured of the deadly sin virus, and who can be trusted not to mess up the planet again.

That's divine prophecy. And believe it, the sequence of world events is unfolding step by step precisely as foretold.

Stormy days are ahead. But Operation Rescue is coming close behind.

APPENDIX A


I was just looking at the first tablet of Genesis and noticed an interesting piece of information that I want to share with you. Below is explained exactly what I've seen and what it may indicate.

* * * * *


“B” MEANS “HOUSE”, “IN” AND “TWO”

Letters of the Hebrew alphabet developed from picture signs. For example, the second letter “*Bet*” (ב) was originally a picture of a house, a shelter. (Hence the place name “*Bethlehem*, “*house* of bread”.)

When ב is turned this way  it looks like a house with a small chimney.

Turned to the left on its side, it became  which means “In”. After all, your home is a place that you are “in” or “inside”. (Actually, without the dot inside the letter, it means “*house*”, and with the dot it means “*in*”.)

This ב is the second letter of the Hebrew alphabet (equivalent to the English letter “B”). And its numerical value is **2** (“*two*”).

And you can see by its shape how  could be turned into a **2**.

THE FIRST WORD IN GENESIS

Hebrew reads from right to left, the opposite direction from English. So let's look at this very ***first word*** of the very first Genesis tablet:

ת י ש א ר ב says “In the beginning”.
T I SH A R B (“B-rashit”)

Each letter has a numerical value (See page 244 of this present work.) Here are the numerical values of the letters that follow “B” (for “In”):

ת	י	שׁ	א	ך	בּ
400		300		200	“IN”
	10		1		

Would you please add up the 200 and the 300 and the 400. What do you get? ...900. Right?

Now add up the 1 and the 10. What is that? ...11.

Now add these together:

900

+ 11

And what comes up? ...9 11.

What does that first word in Genesis say? – “*In 9/11*”.

THE LETTERS IN THAT SAME FIRST TABLET

Here is something else in this same Tablet No. 1 of Genesis. The ***narrative*** of Tablet 1 ***starts at Gen.1:1 and ends at Gen.2:3***. (Gen.2:4 is simply the end-title.)

There are:

1671 Hebrew letters in Genesis chapter 1.

144 Hebrew letters in Genesis 2:1-3.

Plus: 7 pasa markers (pointers)

Total: 1822

As we have seen above, the first word in Genesis says

* “In the beginning”, or

* “In 911”, or

* “2 x 911” (because the first letter – B – means also “two”)

Therefore divide 1822 by 2, and, again, and what does it give you?

Again, you get ...911.

Now, what is 911 doing in Genesis 1:1?

You tell me, what was 9/11 but the catalyst to bring on the chain of events which are now thrusting us to the New World Order?

1. The plain surface message says simply this: *“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.”*
2. The numerical message says, *“In 9/11”*. And we ask, 9/11 what?
– *In 9/11 man (in rebellion against God) created his new world.*

God’s New World brought life. Man’s New World Order brings death.

The above phenomenon is not debatable. It is real. It is right there in Genesis. The only question is, WHY is it there?

Certainly the Creator foreknew all world events. Elsewhere in the Bible He has foretold man’s coming New World Order. But did the Globalists with their scholars go into Genesis, see it there and select their date 9/11 because they saw it in Genesis?

We know that they hate this book of Genesis. They know that Genesis is aware of their dirty tricks before they do them.

Footnote:

Since “*Bet*” means “*house*”, and with the dot (◌ֿ) it means “*in*”, the complete meaning is “in house”. So read this again, and the first word of Genesis reads:

* “in-house 911”.

Is this saying that 911 was an in-house (inside) job?

Interestingly, an October 2006 Angus Reid poll found that 81 percent of Americans felt the Bush administration was either hiding information on what they knew prior to the 9/11 attacks or mostly lying. (Dr H. Titan, http://bogusstory.com/911_inside_job.html)

APPENDIX B

STARTLING QUANTUM MECHANICS DISCOVERY

All things that we can see – living or non-living – are composed of atoms.

But these atoms are also made up of smaller particles, sub-atomic particles, called quanta.

One of the basic rules of quantum mechanics is that everything is made up of little, microscopic particles. So it is that

- * quantum particles (or light particle “wave packets” as science now calls them) form atoms.
- * Atoms form molecules.
- * Molecules form objects.(living and non-living).

Therefore, all material objects are made up of invisible “particles”. We do not fully understand how they operate. But we now know this: that everything that we can see is made up of things that we cannot see.

And were you aware, that this is precisely what the Bible said 2,000 years ago. It claims this: “The things which are seen were not made of things which are visible.” (Hebrews 11:3)

Not only are all material objects made up of “particles”, but also they are made up of forces that keep those particles and objects together.

We now know from our understanding of quantum mechanics that the force which keeps electrons tied to the nuclei of atoms is LIGHT.

So light ties the particles together to form atoms.

And atoms are tied together to make molecules.

And then, finally, objects.

Only in the last century have we discovered that all forms of matter are, in fact, **SOLIDIFIED LIGHT!**

The biblical book of Genesis claims that in the beginning the Creator of the universe said, “Let there be light.” (Genesis 1:3) It says that the very first thing God made was **LIGHT**. Genesis says that the Creator made light before He made any material thing. It insists that He made light before He made the sun and the moon.

For ages, this biblical statement made no sense to many. Considering what we know about our material world, it was reasoned, “How could light exist before the sun existed?”

But now, through our new understanding of quantum mechanics, we realise that nothing can exist until light first exists! Our sun, and every other object in the universe, living or non-living, is made up of **LIGHT!**

You ask, How could the writer of Genesis have known such a deep and mysterious truth? Could it be that the Creator of light and of quantum mechanics revealed it to him?

So, thousands of years before we discovered the truth of quantum mechanics, the Bible had already revealed that:

1. Light was created first.
2. Nothing could be made without light.
3. Everything is made up of “unseen” particles.

I am asked, do any other “holy books” contain such information? With respect, and in raw honesty, I must state that neither the Koran or ANY other “holy book” contains such startling truths. **NONE!**

From first hand research as a front line field scientist over 42 years, I have been driven to this conclusion: The Bible was right before science was. The Bible is never catching up to truth. Rather, truth is forever catching up to the Bible! This is a remarkable and unique document. And its book of Genesis is so cool.

INDEX

- Adam, the first man** 58
Antediluvian world 68-78
Archaeology never disproves Bible 114,122,188
- Babel** 86-92,99-102
Bible numerics 238-258,293-295
- Changes in species** 45-52
Cloning 57-58
Coverups 52,79,129,237
Critics 14-22,38,43-44,52, 111-112,129,188,190,194,196,
 236-237,258,263,286
- Dating**
 - Genesis 117-129,205-225
 - First woman 60-62
 - Flood 95-98
 - Babel 99-102
 - Sumerian texts 101-102
Dating failure 77-79
Death, merciful reason for 280-281
DNA codes 35-38,50-52
Dust, man from 53-56
- Egypt, Hebrews in** 126,171-188
Eve, mother of all 58-67
Evolution
 - scientifically impossible 50-52
 - social consequences 8-11
- Flood, Great** 73-82
 - date of 95-98
- “Generations of...”** 195-204
Genesis
 - world’s oldest document 216-225
 - on tablets 195-219
 - versus other documents 101-112
 - simpler and purer than others 101-105

- not plagiarised 102-105
 - not altered 223-237
 - honest report of both sides 127-128
 - not conspired by priests 113-116
 - names for God 115-116
 - differences in style 113-116
 - chapters 1 and 2 compared 217
 - repetitions 195-197,201-204,207-209
 - “Generations of...” 195-204
 - names of its writers 205-219
 - eyewitnesses wrote 205-219
 - one editor 116
 - Moses compiled it 122-127,224
 - Moses’ 5 bks originally one bk 125
 - Table of Nations 130-142
 - numerics 238-258,292-294
 - in racial memory 264-286
 - historical accuracy 190-194
 - its dating of events is reliable 95-101,108-110,193-194
 - is scientific (See list below in next entry)
 - prophecies 259-263,283-284
 - against the Globalists 12-13,288-291
- (See also: Flood; Babel; Sodom & Gomorrah; Joseph)

Genesis is scientific

- Rocks formed instantly 27-34
- God’s words in DNA code 35-38
- Voice pictures 38-43
- “After its kind” 45-52
- Man made of dust 54-56
- Cloning 57-58
- All races from one origin 59-60
- All from 3 main branches 152
- Eve 6000 years ago 60-62
- Dating of Flood supported 95-96
- Ark’s dimensions 107-108
- 21st century science 253-254

Globalists and evolution 7-18

God

- **mercy of** 280-281
- **names for** 115-116

Haloes 26-34

Ham 140,144-146,151-152,208,259-260

Hebrews in Egypt 126,171-188

Japheth 135,144-149,151-152,208,259-260

Joseph 171-188

“Kinds” 45-52

Languages 83-92

Letters in envelopes 24

Light and matter 295-296

Moses, compiler of Genesis 122-127,224

Mutations 45-52

Names of God 115-116

Noah, all from 143-156

Numerics 238-258,292-294

Polonium haloes 26-34

Pre-Flood world 68-72

Prophecies 259-263,283-284

Quantum mechanics 296-297

Racial memory of Genesis events 62-65,79,85-86,91-92,264-286

Racial origins 133,143-152

Repetitions in Genesis

195-197,201-204,207-209

Scientists, many fake data 52

(See also, Suppression)

Sevens code 238-258,289-290

Shem 99,138-140,144-145,151-152,156,197,201-202,206,208,210-213,225,259-260

Skeptics, see Critics

Sodom & Gomorrah 163-170

Speaking into existence 26-44

Sumerian texts 101-102

Species, see Kinds

Suppression and faking of data 52,79,129,237

Table of Nations 130-142

Tablets of Genesis 195-219

Variation is not evolution 45-52

Voice 26-44

Weapon = 7 289-290

Words in DNA 35-38

Writing, ancient 19-25,83-85

Jonathan Gray
P.O. Box 30
Serpentine 3517
Victoria
Australia
www.surprisingdiscoveries.com
www.beforeus.com

